

# **Sam Bends the World**

A Taboo Romance

By Icepeper

Published 2019

No Rights Reserved

—

Do whatever the fuck you want with it.

# Table of Contents

Chapter 1: JR's Big Surprise.....	4
Chapter 2: Cindy's Story.....	7
Chapter 3: No Turning Back.....	12
Chapter 4: Safe and Sound.....	16
Chapter 5: Goodbye Cindy.....	22
Chapter 6: Hello Sam.....	28
Chapter 7: Sam I Am.....	32
Chapter 8: Beyond the Pale.....	35
Chapter 9: A Glorious Start.....	44
Chapter 10: A Change of Scenery.....	48
Chapter 11: 2-Gether 4-Ever.....	57
Chapter 12: Sam's New Friend.....	63
Chapter 13: The Most Magical Place on Earth.....	71
Chapter 14: Cocksucking 101.....	78
Chapter 15: Anilingus.....	82
Chapter 16: Time to Go Home.....	88
Chapter 17: Home Sweet Home.....	93
Chapter 18: Best Valentine's Day Ever.....	98
Chapter 19: A Tween Conspiracy.....	104
Chapter 20: SweetB & K-Bear.....	108
Chapter 21: Tidal Wave.....	117
Chapter 22: Special Time.....	122
Chapter 23: Jurassic Park.....	128
Chapter 24: Ken Tanner.....	136
Chapter 25: Homework.....	142
Chapter 26: And Beth Makes Three.....	147
Chapter 27: Two Tongues Tasting Twitching Tweens' Tangy Twats.....	152
Chapter 28: Pool Party!.....	159
Chapter 29: The New Normal.....	169
Chapter 30: Tyler Joins in the Fun.....	176
Chapter 31: Partners.....	183
Chapter 32: Horny Potter.....	194
Chapter 33: Beth and Tyler.....	199
Chapter 34: Knocking on the Back Door.....	207

Chapter 35: Make it Right.....	212
Chapter 36: Sam and Jess Bend My World.....	217
Chapter 37: Tyler and Jess.....	226
Chapter 38: Sam Knows Best.....	232
Chapter 39: One... two... Three... Four!... FIVE!.....	237
Chapter 40: Rescue.....	246
Chapter 41: Laying Low.....	252
Chapter 42: Fishing Vacation.....	260
Chapter 43: From Hero to Zero.....	270
Chapter 44: Hero Again.....	278
Chapter 45: Moving In.....	283
Chapter 46: The Captain's Lounge.....	287
Chapter 47: Family Vacation.....	292
Chapter 48: Happy Birthday to Us.....	301
Chapter 49: Adult Swim.....	307
Chapter 50: Fantastically Fun Family Fuck Fest.....	313
Chapter 51: The Wedding.....	322
Chapter 52: Home Again.....	333
Chapter 53: Anniversary.....	337
Epilogue.....	339

# Chapter 1: JR's Big Surprise

My name is Jonathon Rogers, but everyone just calls me JR. I am 32 years old and I am living my dream. Back in 1997 I quit college in my senior year and joined some friends in an Internet startup. I was in on the ground floor of a dotcom, and my life exploded. I was working 16 hour days, 7 days a week and four years later I had pretty much lost control of my life. Nothing seemed real. Then things got very real when I almost lost my life in a major accident. I flipped my fancy sports car trying to avoid a deer on a twisty two-lane stretch of highway that I used to love racing down. I escaped with a few broken bones, a bruised ego and an existential crisis.

I was 25 years old and at the top of the world one day and lucky to be alive the next. It changed me and I dropped out, cashed out and left the tech world behind. I decided I wanted to see the world and so I traveled everywhere I could. When I saw how the rest of the world lived it changed my outlook and I learned to value people, nothings. 6 years later, I felt a little homesick and I came back to see America. I bought an RV, a pickup to tow it and a dog to keep me company.

I was troubled by the changes I saw in the country, the environmental damage, the apparent apathy, and the end of an era. I decided to document what I was seeing by taking pictures, tracking the changes and writing books. I have plenty of money and I'm not worried about how well the books are going to sell. I just want some kind of legacy and I think people in the future will want to know what it was like to live through these changes. I have decided to write one book for each state and so I started driving around the country without any real plan, just following my gut.

It is now October 2008 and I'm in West Virginia, my 7th state. My 5th-Wheel RV is parked in a somewhat run-down campground near a small mountain town that is not having much success adjusting to the changing world. I have modified my RV with a special door for Layla. She is a wonderful German Shepherd and the best four legged

companion anyone could ask for. When I camp I setup a small fenced-in area under the front of the RV for her. That way she can go in and out of the RV whenever she wants even when I'm not here. I like to take her with when I can but usually she can't come with me on my trips to explore and document the surrounding area. I know is that she is the best security alarm I could ever get.

I wasn't expecting the surprise I got when I came home today, however. After I parked the truck I was surprised and worried when Layla greeted me. She looked fine, but the gate to her yard was open. I examined the gate and it was not broken. The latch had opened somehow, or more likely someone opened it, I thought. I closed the gate and climbed up into the RV with my Chinese take-out, ready for a good meal and a relaxing evening. I looked around quickly but nothing looked out of place. I got out a plate and then I heard a noise.

It wasn't very loud but there was definitely something in the bathroom. Maybe some animal had gotten in and Layla had trapped it in there. I opened the door a crack a peeked in, but the panicked eyes I saw looking back at me didn't belong to a trapped animal but to a frightened girl about 10 years old. She had short brown hair and was visibly upset and crying. I tried to look friendly and non-threatening.

"Why, Hello" I said, "Don't be frightened. I'm not going to hurt you."

"A- a- aint you mad that I'm in here?" she asked with a puzzled look on her face.

"No, of course not." I responded. "Layla let you in here and if she thinks you're okay, that's enough for me."

"Layla? Who is Lay... Oh, you mean the dog."

"Yes, Layla is my dog and she is a great judge of character. If she let you in then she thinks you need help. Layla is very protective of anyone that needs help. Are you hungry?"

Her eyes lit up at the mention of food. "Yes!" She responded. "I'm starving."

"Well come sit and eat with me and we can talk about why you are here. Do you like Chinese food?"

"I think so. I've only had it a couple of times. But I'm so hungry I'll eat just about anything."

## Chapter 2: Cindy's Story

"My name is Jonathon but most people call me JR." I said as I put out plates and silverware.

"I'm Cindy." She responded.

"So how old are you Cindy?" I asked as I scooped out some beef fried rice on her plate.

"I'm 10 and three-quarters!" she said, seeming proud of her almost-preteen status.

"I am 32 and uh... seven-twelfths." I said, teasing her.

"Why do you live in a trailer?" she asked between bites, ignoring my attempted dad-joke.

"Because I travel all around the country taking pictures and doing research."

"What for?" she asked, with what seemed to be genuine curiosity.

"Because people are taking too much from the world and the world can't keep up. I want to write some books that document all the changes so people in the future can see what it was like."

"But there are lots of maps and pictures that show all of that. I've read about it in school."

"Yes," I responded, "but they only show the physical changes. I want to document the way those physical changes are affecting the lives of the people that are living through it, like us."

"Yeah, that makes sense. Most people don't seem to care what happens to the world. Maybe they'll care more about what is gonna happen to them."

"Wow!" I said, stunned. "You sure are a smart girl for 10 and three-quarters." I don't know why the huge grin on her face made me feel so good inside, but I really liked the feeling. "So just how did you get in here anyway?" I asked.

"Well," she said, "I was kind of sneaking through the campground looking for someplace to hide and I saw your dog... Layla I mean, looking at me. She didn't look mean or anything, just kind of watching me. I don't really know why, but I stopped and looked back. Then she kind of crawled up to the fence with her head down and whined. I felt bad for her, like maybe she didn't want to be in there, so I walked up and let her smell my hand. She licked it and whined some more so I unlocked the gate to let her out."

"Do you often go around letting strange dogs out of cages?" I asked, surprised at Layla's behavior and her response.

"No! Never!" she said defensively. "I ain't never done anything like that before, but it just seemed right. Anyway, Layla didn't come out of the fence like I thought she would. Instead she barked softly and ran into the trailer. Then she came out, barked again and went back in. It was like she wanted me to follow her, so I did. I crawled through the door and looked around. I thought this would be a good place to hide so I went and sat down on the couch over there. Then Layla jumped up next to me and laid her head in my lap. I ain't never heard of a dog being so nice, so I just started petting her and I sorta fell asleep."

"Wow!" I said again, trying to wrap my head around it. "If Layla thought you were in trouble it explains why she did what she did. Layla is a very smart dog and she is very protective of children and people in need. As I said before, if Layla let you in then you were



invited in, you didn't break in. This is her home too, but this is the first time she ever had a friend over." I laughed.

Cindy laughed as well and bent down to pet Layla again. Layla had been watching over her ever since I got home. She really seemed to think Cindy needed help. It was time to find out why.

"So now I know how you got in, but I need to know why. Why were you sneaking through the campground looking for someplace to hide?"

At first I didn't think she was going to answer but after a little thinking she seemed to realize she had to tell me. "It's because of my Dad." she said finally. "I am afraid he's gonna hurt me and I don't ever want to see him again."

"Why do you think he's going to hurt you?" I asked.

"He's always been really mean, especially when he drinks too much, and he's been drinking a lot more since he lost his job. This morning he started drinking early and got really mad at Carol. She's my stepmom, but I don't like her neither. This morning she and him were in the bedroom when I heard him yell 'I said keep going, Bitch! You don't stop 'til I tell you!' and then I heard him hit her, really hard. Then I heard him coming down the hall to my room and I hid under the bed. The door burst open and he said 'Time for you to grow up you little cunt! Where are you?' He didn't look under the bed, he just went out to look in the kitchen, I guess. As soon as he was gone I got up real quietly and jumped out the window."

She was in tears by the time she finished and Layla was next to her, nuzzling her and trying to make it better. I got up and crossed over to sit by her. I opened my arms and she almost dived into my embrace, sobbing into my chest. I'd never had kids, even younger siblings or cousins. I tried to comfort her as best I could and it seemed to work as she did calm down after a few minutes.

"I'm so sorry you had to go through that sweetheart." I said. Sweetheart! Why did I call her that? "You were right to run away and hide. I think he was going to hurt you. We need to tell the police so they can protect you."

"No!!!" she almost screamed. "You can't do that! My dad's brother is in the police. His whole family is! They would take me right back! Please, please, please!!! Don't take me to them!" She was almost hysterical with fear.

"Okay, okay!" I said. "I won't talk to the police. You're right. I'm sure they would just take you right back. How about we go to the big city and find child protective services."

"No, not there either. I don't want to stay anywhere around here. I want to go far away and if you can't take me I'll just go find someone who can!" she said, defiantly. I could see that she was really upset and I didn't want her to just run off. Even if she got out of the area, young runaways don't fair well. She would be in for a horrible life to be sure.

"What about your Mom? You said Carol was your stepmom, right?"

"Mama's dead. She died when I was two. I don't really remember her much. She and Papa were cousins, I think. So all of her family know Papa too."

"Oh, yeah." I said, suddenly remembering I was in West Virginia. Suddenly I had a nasty thought. "Cindy, you said you live close to here, right? How close?"

"Just over the highway and down the road a bit, on the outside of town."

"And your Uncle is the local police and they are probably going to be looking for you!" I said, starting to panic.

"Oh no!" she said. "You can't let them find me! We have to leave!"

"Did anyone see you in the campground? Did anyone see you get into my RV?" I was starting to get really worried.

"No!" she said, confidently. "I'm really good at hiding and I made sure no one was around."

"Okay I said. I think you are right. I think we need to..." Just then I saw a headlight swing across the RV and I heard a vehicle approaching. "Okay Cindy, I think we are out of time. I need you to be really brave and be very, very quiet. I need you to climb up in my closet and hide behind the clothes. Don't make a sound, okay."

She nodded at me with a horrified look on her face. I took her in back and helped her up behind all my hanging clothes. "I promise I won't let them take you, okay?" I said, trying to sound more sure than I felt.

"O...k.k.kay" she said. I kissed her on the forehead and closed the door. Then I remembered her dishes and just managed to scrape hers off and put it in the dishwasher when a knock came on the door.

## Chapter 3: No Turning Back

Putting on my best nonchalant look I opened the door to see a middle-aged man in a police uniform with a somewhat bored look on his face. I could see the family resemblance to Cindy. This was probably her uncle.

"Hello, may I help you?" I asked.

"May I come in?" he said. "These bugs are going to eat me alive!"

"Sure." I said. "Just don't bring a bunch in with you. I hate sleeping with mosquitos. They Suck!" I joked.

"I agree completely!" he chuckled as he stepped up. Layla started to growl, but it didn't seem to phase him. "It's okay boy, I ain't gonna hurt anybody."

"Layla, it's okay." I told her and she settled down.

"Beautiful Shepherd you have there buddy. Wonderful dogs. Just lost my Duke last year and I still haven't quite gotten over it." He looked sad when he said it and I believed him.

"Yeah, they are great. Layla here guards my RV when I'm out and about during the day. Best security system ever!" I boasted.

"You got that right!" he laughed.

"So how can I help you, Officer..."

"Brown. Sgt. Charles Brown. We're out looking for a lost little girl who looks like this." He showed me a school picture of a younger Cindy. "She's 8 in the picture but she's 10 now. Have you seen her?"

I took the picture and looked it over quickly, but not too quickly, then handed it back. "Nope, I haven't. Has she been missing long?"

"Just since this morning. She shouldn't have gotten far." he replied.

"Gotten far?' I joked. "Sounds like a prisoner, not a missing girl." I joked.

"Huh? Oh. Hah, yeah. I see what you mean. I guess that's just we say it around the station." he laughed, nervously.

"Well, I'll keep a lookout, but I'm heading out tomorrow, so I doubt I'll be much help."

"Oh, I see. Okay. Where you off to, if you don't mind me asking?" he replied, suddenly more interested in me.

"I'm heading South into Virginia, following the Fall colors." I said and explained my research and the books I was writing. I grabbed some of my notes I made that day from my backpack and started to explain about documenting the changing world. His sudden interest seemed to wane as he suddenly realized he'd be stuck listening to my whole life story if he didn't extricate himself quickly.

"Ah, yeah. Um, that's all really cool, but I've gotta go and keep looking for this little girl."

"Oh. Okay." I said, trying to sound disappointed. "I guess duty calls, right?"

"Ah yeah! That's it. Gotta go. Thanks for your help and have a great trip."

He climbed down and walked quickly to his SUV, swatting the bugs away as he went. After I heard him drive away I pulled down

every blind so no one could see inside. I went to the closet and opened it up to see Cindy grinning at me. She jumped into my arms.

"You were awesome!" She said. I don't think Uncle Charlie has any idea where I am. I really liked the way you got him to leave by lecturing him about the environ..."

"Hey!" I said. "I wasn't lecturing him. I was..." but I couldn't keep a straight face either and we both laughed for almost a whole minute, letting the laughter wash away the leftover fear and worry.

"Okay, stay low so you don't cast any shadows on the windows. I'm supposed to be alone here, well, except for Layla. I'm gonna turn on the TV kind of loud so nobody hears us talking."

Cindy followed directions and soon we were safely seated on the couch, away from the windows and able to talk freely.

"So tomorrow I'm going to pack up in the morning and get on the road. I'll head to Virginia, but I'm not going to stop there. It's a little too close for me right now so we'll head South, maybe Georgia or Florida."

"Oh boy!" Cindy jumped. "I've never been more than an hour away from here. I can't wait!"

"Well, I'm glad you're excited, but there are some serious things I need to talk to you about." I said solemnly

"What?" she said, sounding dejected.

"I just lied to a police officer and I'm about to take you away from here without permission. That's kidnapping and if anyone finds out I could be thrown in jail for a long time."

"But you're not kidnapping me!" she cried. "You're rescuing me! You're saving me!"

"That may be how a lot of people would see it, but the law would see it as kidnapping and I'm risking everything to do this."

"But you're not going to abandon me somewhere, are you? You won't leave me, will you!?" She was almost in tears again.

"No." I said softly, but firmly to her. "My chat with 'Uncle Charlie' convinced me that you can not stay here. Nobody could even find a recent picture of you and he talked like he was trying to apprehend you, not rescue you. I don't know what has come over me but I'm determined. I will not leave you Baby Girl, not now or ever."

"I'm not a baby!" she said.

"No, you're not a baby, you're MY Baby, and nobody puts Baby in a corner!" I joked.

"What does that mean?" she asked, puzzled.

"Well, looks like your pop culture education is severely lacking. Let's start fixing that, shall we?" I said as I reached for my Dirty Dancing DVD.

## Chapter 4: Safe and Sound

Cindy fell asleep in my arms before the movie was over. I grabbed a pillow and a blanket for her and tucked her in on the couch before changing and climbing into bed. Layla normally climbs into bed and curls up at my feet but tonight I guess she was sleeping next to Cindy and watching over her. But just then I did feel someone climbing into bed with me, but it wasn't Layla, it was Cindy.

"I'm kind of scared and I don't want to sleep out there by the door." she said.

"Layla will protect you, don't you worry about that."

"I know, but I'd rather sleep here next to you, if that's okay."

"Okay Baby Girl, just don't hog the covers, okay?" I joked.

"Oh, I won't!" she said, smiling. She slid off her jeans and climbed under the covers in her panties and tee shirt, snuggling right up next to me. I wrapped an arm around her and she seemed to just melt, relaxing completely and was soon asleep.

I felt a mixture of emotions but mostly I felt protective of this desperate little girl. Well, not that little I discovered as her warm body pressed next to mine. It had been a few weeks since I had gotten laid but I was determined to keep Cindy innocent. I was falling in love to be sure, but it felt like the love of a father for his daughter. I smiled to myself and held her in a protective embrace as I drifted off to sleep.

The next morning I was awoken rather abruptly by one of Cindy's feet bashing me in the head. She had been tossing and turning all night and her head was at the bottom of the bed. She was spooning with Layla who looked at me, assessing the situation. "You're fine, Layla." I said quietly. "Good Girl." She laid her head back down as I



slid out of bed and got dressed. I let Cindy sleep as I packed up the RV.

After everything was hooked up I came back, let Layla out for her morning business and woke Cindy up. "We're about to head out. Normally no one is allowed to ride in the 5th wheel while I'm traveling but I am going to have to break that rule for a little bit, at least until we get away from here. I don't want any chance of anyone seeing you with me."

"That's okay. I don't want to risk it either. Where should I sit?"

"You might as well stay in bed. Layla will be here with you."

"Okay. But don't leave me back here too long, okay." she begged.

"Don't worry Baby Girl. I'll stop and get some breakfast when we get to the Interstate and we'll eat here in the RV, out of sight."

"What's an Interstate?" she asked.

"Wow." I said again. This poor girl really has been sheltered. "It's a really big highway and there are always a bunch of places to eat near them. Just sit tight back here and soon you'll be safely away from here, for good."

"Yeah!" she said. "There are nothing but bad memories here, until I met Layla, I guess." She climbed back into the bed and Layla followed her. It was time to move out.

Driving on I thought about my situation and realized that my life had truly changed, drastically. I didn't regret what I had done, but I was starting to see just how much of a commitment I had signed up for. I didn't worry about anyone from here locating Cindy once we got far enough away, but I also knew that she couldn't be Cindy Brown anymore; she needed a new identity. I have heard that such

things were possible, if you knew where to look. My tech experience gave me a way to find some people online who could get the job done. Time to take a trip to the dark web.

I stopped at a fast food place by the Interstate that served breakfast and we ate in the RV. Everything was new to Cindy, even fast food. It was kind of fun to experience the world as if for the first time through her. I was starting to really look forward to our future adventures together.

“Okay, so you need to stay here for a little bit longer until I find someplace deserted to stop. Then you can come up in the truck with me. Is that alright?”

“I guess, but how long? I really want to be up there with you!”

“Just a few more minutes sweetie, I promise.” Five minutes later she was up with me and so excited to be out on the road. I drove all the way to South Carolina that day. I felt so much safer now that we were so far away. I parked the RV at a rest area for the night and we slept until late the next morning. Then we headed out towards the Coast.

I took Cindy into a Walmart and bought her some new clothes. We didn't buy too much because I wanted to stop at a second hand store to buy most of her things. I wanted her wardrobe to be mostly worn in, as if she had been wearing them for a while. I planned to stay at a hotel with a pool that night, so we bought her bathing suits as well. I didn't quite understand why the sight of a prepubescent girl in a fairly simple one-piece bathing suit made me horny, but I was beginning to see a pattern.

“Can we get in the pool!?! I want to go now!” She blurted out as soon as we checked in the room. She was so excited it was contagious.

“Okay, but we have to shower first.” I said.

“Race you.” she said as she stripped right in front of me and headed for the shower. I was a little shocked at first, but that was soon replaced by a tent forming in my pants. “Ouch, the water is too hot.” she called a little later.

“Hold on. I’ll be right there.” I said as I grabbed my suit and headed into the bathroom. She was standing outside of the tub, leaning over and fiddling with the controls. Her beautiful butt was dancing right in front of me as she struggled and I almost tripped as I walked over. “Here, let me try.” I said and I reached over her and adjusted the temperature. “There, how’s that?”

She reached her hand out and felt the warm water. “Perfect. Thank you Daddy.” she said as she turned and hugged me. (Daddy?!? ) The bulge in my pants poked her in the belly as she squeezed me tight and she stepped back, puzzled. “What’s that?” she asked, innocently.

“Oh!” I stammered, embarrassed. “That’s uh... that’s my penis.” I finally said, deciding that I wanted to be honest with her whenever possible.

“Oh... Okay.” she said slowly before climbing in the shower. I stripped off my clothes and tried to will my woody away, but to no avail. I grabbed the soap and shampoo before climbing in.

“Here, you wash your hair first while I use the soap. Then we can switch.” I said as I handed her the shampoo. I took advantage of her closed eyes while she shampooed to wash my junk and finished everything else right as she finished rinsing her hair. “Perfect timing!” I said as we swapped. I caught her stealing glances at my still-erect penis as I started washing my hair. I managed to keep the shampoo out of my eyes so I could squint and watch her while she thought I couldn’t see her. I don’t know what turned me on more; the way she practically stared at my cock or her rubbing her soapy hands all over

her delicious body. I almost lost it when she was cleaning her pussy and her ass.

“Alright!” I declared when we were all dried off. “Let’s suit up and head to the pool.”

My dick behaved itself for the rest of the evening, even when we rinsed the chlorine off when we got back to the room. She didn’t look at it nearly as much now that it wasn’t hard. I could almost see the gears turning in her head as she tried to figure out how it worked.

“I’m ready to eat, how about you? Anywhere special you want to go for dinner tonight?” I asked.

“I’ve only eaten at a restaurant a few times. I wanna go someplace special! Can we get some spaghetti?”

“Olive Garden it is. Let’s go!”

“I was really surprised when you called me Daddy earlier.” I said on the way to the restaurant.

“Oh, yeah.” she replied. “I just figure that’s what everyone is going to think when they see us together, right? That you’re my Dad. So I figured if I called you that, then nobody would think anything was weird.”

“That’s a really good idea, sweetheart. Is that what you want for real? Do you want me to be your Daddy?” I asked, hopefully.

“Oh yeah! Really? Could you be my Daddy for real?”

“Well, there is a way that you could become my daughter, if I adopt you. But I can’t adopt Cindy Brown. You would have to become someone else before I could become your Daddy.”

“But I am Cindy. How can I become someone else.”

“By getting a new identity. Right now there is a Birth Certificate somewhere that says your name is Cindy Brown and who your parents are. I am going to get another Birth Certificate for you and you will become someone else.” I tried to explain so she could understand.

“Where can you get that? Who would I be? Who would be my parents? Would you be?” she asked.

“Well there are a few ways, I think. I’m pretty sure I can find some people who will do it for me if I pay them. But you will have a different name, and we can’t pick it. Will that be okay?”

“I guess so. It’ll be fun to be someone else.”

“I will be able to adopt you after we get you a new identity, but there is something really important that you have to do for this to work.” I warned her.

“What’s that.”

“If you have any friends, even friends online, you can never, ever contact them again. Do you understand? This is very important.”

“Oh, well that’s okay. I don’t have a best friend, just some girls at school I’d hang out with sometimes. I don’t have any online friends. We don’t have a computer at home and we can’t go to any chat places at school.”

“That’s good.” I said, relieved. “Okay, when we get back to the hotel after dinner I will find you a new identity so I can be your Daddy for real.” She beamed at me and reached across the seat to hug me. We were both excited by the idea.

## Chapter 5: Goodbye Cindy...

When we got home I pulled out my laptop, connected through some VPNs and started searching the dark web. It was fascinating. It looked like just about anything was available out there, if you had the money, and I did. I poked around and made some inquiries which led me to an organization that was highly recommended. I would pay a lot for it, but more money usually results in better service and in this case it did.

It cost me \$25K for a new identity and another \$15K for a new SSN. They were even able to get me official and fully legal adoption papers for another \$10K. I got the feeling that a fair chunk of that money was for bribing some governmental officials around the country. Huge bureaucracies like the US Federal government have many ways for people with the right skills and in the right places to get just about any official document generated, no forgeries needed.

I had to give them all of my real information for the documents, but there was very little chance of it being used against me. These places relied on a good reputation to get clients and if they ever betrayed a client's trust, the jobs and money would all disappear. It was going to take about a month for everything to get done, but they'd keep me up to date with the progress. All that was left to do was to wait.

After giving Cindy (for now) the good news we got ready for bed. It was kind of hot in the room so I just wore some boxer shorts instead of my regular PJs. Cindy put on the new cotton nightgown she had bought earlier, over her pink panties covered with little teddy bears. She looked adorable. The nightgown seemed a little short, only coming down to mid-thigh. I wasn't complaining.

I had some movies on my laptop and we watched Grease, with Olivia Newton-John and John Travolta. She liked it, especially the music and tried to sing along. I promised I'd get the soundtrack so we

could listen to it in the car. Finally we cuddled up again and drifted off to sleep.

I was slowly brought back to consciousness by the feeling of someone touching me. Like most men, my dick had gotten hard during the night and apparently had poked out of the hole in the front of my boxers. I realized that Cindy was very carefully exploring my cock with her hand. I held perfectly still and acted like I was still asleep. After a few minutes she stopped exploring and rolled over, going back to sleep. I waited until I was sure she was asleep and then I got up, went into the bathroom and fapped like I was a teenager again.

The next morning she acted like nothing had happened and I did as well. I had found a campground out on one of the coastal Islands, just a short walk from the beach. Cindy was so excited. She had never even seen the ocean before, let alone been swimming in it. We set up camp and went for a walk on the beach. I had to almost grab her to keep her from heading out into the surf. She seemed to have no fear, which was good... and bad.

“Let’s go make some sandwiches, pack a cooler and have a beach day.” I said.

“Yeah! Yeah! Yeah!” she said and ran back to the RV, followed by Layla.

I walked back and by the time I got there I was disappointed to see she had already changed into her bathing suit. Then I had a stroke of genius. “Hey.” I said as I climbed up in. “How about you try on the other suit we bought, the bikini?”

“That’s a great idea!” she said as she started to peel off her suit. I tried to look busy but I was really just enjoying the show. She rummaged through her bag and pulled out her new suit. “Can you take the tags off, Daddy?” she asked, handing me the suit. I grabbed a knife and carefully cut them off as I watched her fidget out of the corner of my eye. Her pale little body was turning me on again and

my dick was growing. “Thanks!” she said as she grabbed the suit and started to put it on.

“Wait!” I said, another idea popping into my head. “You’re skin is really pale and you’ll burn if you get too much sun. We need to put on a lot of sunscreen. Let’s do it before you put on the suit. It’ll be easier.”

“Okay.” she said without any hesitation. “Here. I’ll stand on the couch while you put it on me.”

OMG! I thought. I thought I was just going to maybe do her back, but she wanted me to rub it all over her naked body. I grabbed the bottle of sunscreen and squirted some into my hand. “Let me warm it up before I put it on. After I finish you then you can do me.” I ventured, hoping I wasn’t pushing my luck too far.

“Deal!” she said, smiling. “That’s only fair, right?”

I stretched it out as long as I thought I could, rubbing the sunscreen all over her sexy little body. I think she was getting excited too as I swear I could see her little vulva swelling. Her little nipples got harder as I rubbed it into her chest as well. I didn’t rub it on her pussy, but I did thoroughly squeeze her plump little ass. When I did her inner thighs she almost seemed to get a little weak in the knees and had to grab hold of me for support. All too soon I was done.

“Okay, your turn.” she said. “Strip!”

“Yes mam!” I joked as I stood up and stripped off my clothes.

“You’re too tall.” she declared. “Lay on the bed so I can reach everywhere.”

I was in heaven. I couldn’t believe what this little girl was going to do to me. She hadn’t put on her suit yet, I noticed. I didn’t think it was an oversight. I laid on my front first, pulling my raging hard-on



up as I laid myself down. She started on my arms and then she climbed onto my back like she was mounting a horse. I could feel her hot, wet pussy in the small of my back and it was rubbing back and forth as she worked the lotion into my shoulders. She slid back as she worked down my back. I was sure she left a trail of pussy juice over my butt and down one of my legs. She was really wiggling on my leg as she rubbed it all over my butt. Then she turned around and kept wiggling on my legs, switching legs so she could rub the sunscreen onto my other leg.

“Okay, time to flip over.” she said as she stood up. I turned over to find she had stepped up by my head and I was looking right up at her glistening pussy. She didn’t notice me looking at her since she was looking unblinking at my rock hard cock. After a second or two she turn to look at me and kneeled by my head. She started with the arm right next to her and then leaned over my head to do the other arm. Her little nipples were as big and hard as I had ever seen them and mere inches from my mouth. I kept control of myself however and she soon moved onto my chest. She seemed to enjoy rubbing it in my chest hair and spent a little more time on each nipple than was necessary. Again, I didn’t complain.

After she got down to my belly button she moved down a little, and once again climbed up on top of me, but this time she was sitting squarely on my chest and her well rounded ass was just inches in front of my head. She started rubbing it into my lower stomach and then moved down below my waistline. She leaned forward and suddenly her magnificent pussy was staring me right in the face. Even with the sunscreen the musty scent of her dewy slit was easy to smell. I was enjoying the view immensely as she kept rubbing sunscreen all over my pelvis, not quite getting to the base of my shaft or my balls.

I heard her giggle as she rubbed back and forth and I could feel my dick waving back and forth as well. I was wondering what she was going to do next when she suddenly reached her hands forward, bypassing my cock and started to rub it into my ballsack. Oh My God! The feeling was indescribable. I almost shot my load right there

but held it in barely. My effort was for naught as the next thing she did was to grab my dick and start stroking it, obsessively working in the sunscreen, but effectively lighting the fuse of the most powerful orgasm I have ever had.

“Wait! Don’t touch tha.... Aaaahhhhhhh!” I couldn’t hold it back. The first jet shot straight up, over her head. The next one hit her directly in the face. She let go and watched as wave after wave rolled over me and my cum continued to erupt. Soon it was over and I just laid there breathing hard. She was rising up and down on my chest with each breath. After a minute she ‘dismounted’ and turned around to look at me.

“What happened?” she asked, stunned by what had occurred.

“I had an orgasm, Baby. Didn’t you learn about those in Sex Ed?”

“We didn’t have those classes. A bunch of people from the church made the schools stop teaching it.”

“Ah, well. There’s a lot to explain, but now isn’t the right time. I’ll find a book and we can go over it a little later. For now let me just tell you that I probably shouldn’t have let you put sunscreen on me down there.” I said, pointing at my deflating dick. “That’s something that grownups do.”

“But it’s okay for me to see it, right? Seeing your family naked isn’t bad, is it?”

“Well no, I don’t think it is. Some people think it’s wrong, like the people in that church.” I tried to explain. “But a lot of other people, like me, think that nudity is natural and healthy and that hiding it all of the time leads to negative body image and impaired ability to...” She was looking very confused now. “Let’s just say that I think it is okay when it makes for people to be naked, but I don’t think

people need to be naked all the time. Some people do think that but I don't go that far."

"Well, okay." she said, but she still seemed confused. She wiped her hand off on a towel and then noticed the cum on her cheek. "What is this stuff then?" she asked, wiping her face clean with her fingers.

"That's the semen that came out of my penis when I had the orgasm." I responded, entranced by this 10 year old girl rubbing my cum between her fingers, trying to figure out what it was.

She held it up to her face to look at it. Then she sniffed it. Then she licked it. "Mmmm. Tastes good!" she said before licking her fingers clean. I didn't think it was possible after the massive orgasm I just had, but my dick started growing again. "Hey, look. It's getting bigger again!"

"And now it's time to go to the beach." I said quickly, as I stood up and put on my trunks. "Here's your suit. Go ahead and put it on and we can get going." Jesus Fucking Christ! I thought. Just when I thought she was too incredible to be true, she gets even more amazing! I didn't know what I was going to do.

## Chapter 6: Hello Sam

Cindy had a great time at the beach. We both did. She learned how to swim in lakes and rivers where she grew up. She took the the ocean like she was part dolphin. I showed her how to body surf and I told her we would get some boogie boards later and ride the waves. We never even touched the food. We ended up feeding the meat from the sandwiches to Layla and the bread to the Seagulls. She even got some to grab it out of her hand.

I noticed our sunscreen was washing off and I told her we should get back before we get a sunburn. She agreed when I promised to return tomorrow. After rinsing the saltwater off at the beach shower we went back to the RV for some clothes before going to the main showers in the campground to finish. Since the mens and womens showers were separated we had to shower separately, but after the incident earlier I figured it was for the best. Cindy wanted Layla to shower with her, but I told her she wasn't ready to give Layla a bath yet. I promised to show her how so she could bathe Layla herself.

I tried to get on the Internet to find some Sex Ed material but the campground didn't have WiFi and my phone wasn't getting a signal. We headed into town and I stopped by a bookstore to get a Sex Ed book. While I was there I took Cindy to the homeschooling section to figure out where her education was at. I was disappointed, but not surprised, to find out that she was quite a bit behind where she should be for her grade level. We grabbed a bunch of books so I could tutor her and bring her up to where she should be. She said she didn't like school but I soon figured out that she did really like to learn, just not the way they were doing it back home. I told her it wouldn't be like it was in school and she cheered up.

Next we went to the surf shop and got some boogie boards and more beach gear. I got a nice shelter that we could set up on the beach so we could stay out there all day in the shade if we wanted to. I also got some fishing gear since she wanted to try to fish.

Next we ate dinner at a great local seafood place. Cindy figured out that she loves seafood, which pleased me, since it was one of my favorites as well. Lastly we grabbed a bunch of groceries and headed back home, the only home we had at the moment. After dessert and a movie we climbed in bed, both worn out from the day.

I was brought out of my sleep again when I felt someone fumbling with my boxer shorts. I knew it was Cindy again. I was figuring out that she was fascinated with my dick, almost obsessed even. It explained what she did with the sunscreen. My massive orgasm didn't seem to scare her off. If anything it seems to have increased her determination. Now she wasn't satisfied to play with my dick when it was hard, she was trying to make it hard. I think she realized that her licking my cum off of her fingers is what made me start to get hard again and now she was trying to experiment. I felt it start to work but I didn't want this to get out of control so I rolled over and went back to sleep.

Our stay at the beach fell into a rhythm. We woke up, took a long walk with Layla and then had breakfast. I would tutor Cindy until lunchtime. After lunch we would head to the beach or explore the local area. There were a few beaches I could drive the truck on. It was nice to be able to find a deserted stretch of beach to fish and swim. Then we would come home, have dinner, study for an hour and then a movie before bed.

I went over the Sex Ed book with her the next night after I bought it. She was fascinated with everything having to do with sex and asked some rather advanced questions, but I didn't try to hide anything. The book went over oral sex but she wanted more detail than the book provided. I got very uncomfortable when she talked about children and sex. I finally learned that she had played around with a neighbor boy that was her age. I guess that explains the interest in my dick since a man's penis is so much larger than a child's.

Her nighttime adventures of playing with my dick continued, but not every night. I was still not feeling comfortable with the situation and I continued to shut it down, when I woke up that is. I know I slept through it a couple of times and I don't know how far she got. I was hoping her interest would lessen after she had the Sex Ed book, but I think it may have increased it.

Eight days after I arranged to get Cindy her new identity I finally got some news. They had a birth certificate and were working on the SSN and the adoption. They faxed a copy and the original would be sent with the other documents after everything is complete. I came back to the RV after fetching the fax from the campground office. Nobody blinked twice at the idea of someone getting a copy of a birth certificate for his daughter faxed in. That kind of thing happens almost everyday.

“Guess what!” I said to her as I climbed up into the RV. Her face looked up from the book she was reading. The Sex Ed book again, I noticed.

“You are no longer 10 and three-quarters years and one week old anymore. And your name is not Cindy.”

“Really!” she said, jumping up. “Who am I? What's my name? How old am I?”

“Your name is Samantha Jane Dockery and you are 11 years, 2 months and 8 days old. Nice to meet you, Sam.”

“Sam! I like it. And I'm older too. A little older, about 5 months older?”

“Yep.” I confirmed. “You need to memorize this info and forget the past, okay. This is who you are now. We will need to sit down and write up a past for you that you can memorize too. This could be fun, don't you think. A lot of people wish they could go back and change their past. You get to go back and write it!”

“Hey, yeah! I hadn’t thought of that!” She stopped and started thinking. “What should I write? Will you help?”

“Yes, I can help, but only to make sure it is plausible and nothing sounds out of the ordinary. It might seem neat to make up something really cool, but that could end up being trouble later.” I cautioned. “The best plan is to make it kind of boring and unremarkable. At least the stuff that people would be able to look up. You can pepper it with lots of fun anecdotes.”

“And tick whats?”

“Short stories about interesting points in your life. Like that time your dog chased a skunk and came home stinking so much he got banished to the garage for two weeks.”

“I didn’t have a dog... Oh, I see. Cindy didn’t have a dog, but Sam did.” She had figured it out.

“Yep. Oh, and one more thing. We missed your 11th birthday. How about we go celebrate and I can buy you a great big present!”

“Hey, yeah. I didn’t think about that. Now I wish Sam was younger so I could have TWO birthdays!”

“Sorry Baby Girl. You’re Sam now and Sam has been 11 for more than two months. But we can still have a party, right?”

“Yeah. Let’s go. I want Pizza for my birthday.” she decided.

“Okey dokey. I’ve got a good idea what present to get you too. Let’s go”

## Chapter 7: Sam I Am

It wasn't much of a party, just Sam and me, but we had fun and she enjoyed being Sam. She wanted me to call her Sam all of the time and she introduced herself to almost everyone we met. She started to channel her inner Dr. Seuss and would answer "Sam I Am" whenever anyone asked her name, which of course got a big laugh.

One the way home I told her it was time for her present. I took her to a local bicycle shop and let her pick out whatever bike she wanted. She didn't go for a girl's bike as I expected but ended up picking out a top of the line mountain bike that came in a bunch of different sizes. The measured her up and told us that they didn't have one her size in stock. It would be a week before it could get here but she didn't mind waiting. She wanted that bike and it was her choice. I ended up getting a different mountain bike for me, one that wasn't quite as state of the art as Sam's, but it was right for me. I ordered some custom options so mine wouldn't be in for a week either.

It wasn't easy to fall asleep after such an exciting day. We snuggle in bed and started creating her past. Sam is the most amazing girl I have ever known. I loved her so much it almost scared me. Sometimes she seems so grown up and wise. Other times she is just an innocent child who has sooooo much to learn about the world. I'd known her less than 10 days and already I couldn't imagine life without her. I hoped I would never find out as I drifted off to sleep.

I woke up again in the middle of the night and I felt the familiar touch of Sam. But this time she wasn't just trying to wake up my sleeping dick. This time my dick was fully erect and she wasn't just touching it gently. She was stroking it up and down, giving me a wonderful handjob. I continued to feign sleep, but that feeling was building and I knew it wouldn't be long before I came. I slowly opened my eyes and saw Sam next to me, watching her hand stroke me in long, regular strokes. As the pressure inside continued to build I studied Sam, watching her face as she watched her hand.



Then she looked up at me face and saw that I was awake. Her hand stopped and she started to pull it away. "Please don't stop Baby Girl." I begged, "I'm almost there!" A more intense look formed in her eyes and she started to stroke me again, but with more determination and desire. I stared into her eyes and I was filled with such a loving desire for this sweet little girl that I could barely stand it.

As I got closer and closer to release I reached out with my hand to stroke and caress her cheek. She closed her eyes and leaned her head into my touch, returning my attention. I was just seconds from cuming now. I reached out with my hand and gently brought her mouth to mine. We kissed deep and sensually. I felt her warm lips press into me as I finally let go, blowing a massive load. She didn't stop this time. In fact her strokes fell in time them with my spasms, milking the jizz out of me. I took a while to stop and when I finally finished we broke off our kiss. She looked into my eyes with such loving that I felt sure I would explode.

Then she turned her head and brought her hand up to her mouth. She started licking her fingers clean. When she finished she leaned forward and started to lick it off of my stomach, even slurping up some of the bigger pools. Finally she squeezed the last drops out of my dick onto her tongue. It was the sexiest thing I had ever seen, in real life or even in a porno. She is a 10 year old girl!

When she was finished she laid herself back down next to me. Then she gave me a soft kiss on the lips and laid her head on my chest. She was asleep in less than a minute. I couldn't sleep yet. My mind was still processing what had just occurred. This wasn't an accident like the sunscreen incident. She knew what she was doing and she did it quite well. To make matters worse, I didn't put a stop to it this time. In fact I actually begged her to keep going. Everything's changed. Sam is becoming a 10 year old sexual goddess, and it looks like I am her devoted priest.



## Chapter 8: Beyond the Pale

I awoke the next morning to the smell of bacon. Sam had done a lot of the cooking growing up and she knew her way around a kitchen. We usually made breakfast together, but then again, I usually woke up before her. I climbed out of bed, unsure of what I was going to do and say. I decided to just be straightforward and talk with her, instead of lecturing to her.

“Good morning, Baby Girl.” I said as I climbed down and walked into the kitchen. “You sure are up early.”

“I was so excited this morning, I couldn’t stay in bed. I let you sleep though. You had a big night!” she said, giggling.

“Yeah, about that. I think we need to have a talk.” I said, determined.

“I kinda figured.” she said, resigned. “Breakfast is done though. Can we eat first?”

“Sure. Maybe we should talk while we take Layla for her morning walk.”

“I’d like that.” she said, a little more cheerfully. It’s harder to lecture someone while walking.

I steered our breakfast conversation to the history we were crafting for her new identity. We came up with several good ideas and I jotted them down in one of my notebooks before I forgot them. We washed up after breakfast and headed out for our walk with an excited Layla in the lead. I waited until we were away from the campground and we were alone before broaching the subject of what happened last night.

“So why did you decide to give me a handjob in my sleep.” I asked abruptly, not beating around the bush.

“Because I love you and like playing with your penis. It’s so neat that it gets big and hard like that.”

“Well, I must admit, I like playing with my penis too!” I laughed.

Sam laughed too. “When you had that orgasm before we went to the beach I saw how good it made you feel. I also liked how it tasted. I felt really special and close to you when I licked and swallowed it. I wanted to make you orgasm again so I could swallow more of it so I would feel even closer to you. When I saw how your penis got hard sometimes at night I figured I could do it when you were sleeping.”

“You really thought this through, didn’t you. So last night wasn’t the first time? How many times have you done this?” I asked, wishing I had been awake for all of them.

“That was the third one. You didn’t wake up before. I only did it because I love you so much and doing it made me feel like I was part of you. I want to keep doing it, and a lot of other things too. I love you so much and I want to be your lover. Wait! You love me too, don’t you?” she asked, suddenly worried that I didn’t feel the same way.

“Oh Baby Girl, I love you so, so much it almost scares me. I will never stop loving you. Don’t you ever worry about that.” She broke out into the biggest smile. Then she walked closer to me and gave me a huge hug. “I love you with every fiber of my being, but I love you as my daughter. What we did last night is what grown ups do when they love each other, not daddies and their daughters.”

“But why?” she asked, genuinely wondering at the difference. “If they really love each other, isn’t it kinda the same?”

“Ah, but what kind of love?” I countered. “There are a lot of different, but similar emotions that we call love.”

“Like what?”

“Well,” I continued as I thought of examples. “You love Layla right?” She nodded. “But not the same way you love me, right.”

“No, I guess not. But that’s different. She’s a dog.”

“But she’s a very special dog to me, and I think to you now too. I can honestly say I love her more than most of the people I have ever known, outside of my parents, my brother, and you, of course.”

She smiled again. “I know what you mean. I only got to know her for a short time but I already love her more than I ever did my Dad or Carol.”

“That kind of love is probably not the best example. But think of the way a happy mommy and daddy love each other. I know it wasn’t that way in your home, but did you know any other families with mommies and daddies that loved each other a bunch?”

She thought about it a moment. “I guess my old friend Annie’s parents really loved each other a bunch. They used to hug each other a lot and they were really nice to each other. They were really nice to me too. Heck, they were nice to everybody.”

“Well, Annie’s mommy and daddy have a bond based on sharing with one another and they were peers... that is to say they are at the same level in the relationship. Their relationship formed because they chose to share their lives together.”

“I guess I understand. But how is that different from other kinds of love?” she asked.

“Well, Annie and her daddy love each other too, but they are not peers, not at the same level. Annie didn’t choose to be in the relationship and her daddy is the one at the top, the one in charge. He makes the rules and because he loves Annie he makes rules that will help her grow up happy and well cared-for.”

“So Annie has to love her daddy? That doesn’t seem right.” she protested.

“Well, she doesn't have to love him. Do you love your daddy?” I asked. She looked at me a little funny. “Not me silly, your old dad.” I reminded her.

“Oh, him.” she said as a kind of shadow seemed to fall over her. I felt a little bad bringing it up since it apparently made her sad to think about it. “No. Not really. I didn’t have anyone else though so sometimes I guess I did... a little.”

“Don’t be ashamed, Sam. No person is completely bad and I’m sure you and your dad had a few good times together. It doesn’t excuse the way he and Carol treated you though. Just try to remember the good things and let go of the bad. Don’t hold onto it or it will eat you up on the inside. Come here.” I said finally as I opened my arms and picked her up in a big bear hug. She started to cry and I just held her close and gently rocked her until it passed.”

“I’m sorry, Baby Girl.” I said as I set her down gently and kneeled in front of her so I could look her in the eyes. “I didn’t mean to bring all of that up. I should have realized that you would still have a lot to work through. I’ll help where I can, but we can try to find someone else you can talk with if you need it.”

“No.” she said quickly. “I don’t want to talk to anyone else about it. They might try to take me back there.”

“Well, it still isn’t good to keep it all inside. Tell you what, why don’t you tell Layla.” I suggested. She looked at me like I was crazy.

“No, seriously. Talk to her out loud when no one else is around. I know she won’t be able to talk back but it will still help for you to express your feelings out loud, even to her. Besides, she is a real good listener.”

That brought a smile back to her face and we started walking again. “So, where was I? Oh yeah, adding sex or to a relationship will change it in a lot of ways. In a healthy marriage it will strengthen the relationship as each partner shares themselves with the other. In some marriages one partner will try use sex to control their partner. That’s the kind of thing that breaks up a lot of marriages and leads to divorce.” I summarized.

“But in a healthy relationship you said it can make things better, right? Won’t it make our relationship better?” she asked, hopefully.

“But the dynamic of the relationship, the bond that holds us together is very different. You are not my wife, and you can’t be, ever. You are my daughter. We cannot add a sexual component to our relationship and keep the balance right. I’m the boss remember, I’m the Dad. If we bring sex into it then I would be in control and that’s not healthy. That’s the kind of thing that breaks up marriage relationships, remember. I don’t want to risk losing the relationship we have.” I hoped she understood. I loved her so much and I couldn’t risk that.

“But I was the one that started it, remember? she tried to point out. “Doesn’t that mean I’m the one controlling it?”

That brought a smile to my face. I wonder if she has any idea how close to the mark that was. So far she was the one in control of our sexual encounters. That isn’t a good thing, though.

“There are other reasons too. It’s illegal for one. I could be tossed in jail very quickly if anyone ever finds out.”

“You could be tossed in jail now because you rescued me, remember?” she pointed out.

“Well, I guess that’s true.” I conceded. “Incest is a societal taboo as well, since it can lead to inbreeding.”

“But we’re not related, remember?” she countered.

“That’s true too. Moot point anyway since I’ve had a vasectomy.” I mused. “That means I can’t get a girl pregnant.” I told her when she gave me a puzzled look.

“Cool!” she exclaimed. “That means we could...”

“Hey!” I stopped her. “You’re kind of jumping way ahead there, aren’t you?” That brought her back to the discussion. “I guess the biggest thing that is stopping me from giving in is the thought that this might damage our relationship. I really do love you more than anything else and I don’t want to risk that. Nothing is worth losing your love.”

“But you won’t lose my love, I promise. Nothing we did could make me stop loving you. So, can we be lovers Daddy” she asked, so innocently.

“I’m going to have to think about it. And I want you to think about it too. Think about it very hard and try to consider all of the things that could go wrong.”

“But I already have...” she started.

“Well I want you to think about it some more. One of the other big reasons society outlaws sex with children is that people don’t believe young teens and children are mature enough to make what is called informed consent. That is to say that they don’t believe you realise just what having sex means for you in the future. I personally think that most kids can understand by the age of 12. You’re not quite



there yet, but you do amaze me by how mature you can be every now and then.”

“Thanks.” she said, genuinely proud.

“Here’s the deal.” I proposed. “We will both spend the rest of the day thinking about it and we will decide tonight. So we don’t know what the other decided beforehand we will let each other know when we go to bed. If you decide you do want to become lovers, then come to be naked. I’ll do the same. We’ll find out when we meet under the covers.”

“Oh, cool! Okay, I promise I’ll be as mature and grown up as I can be today and think about everything you have said. I’ll think about all the consequences and make up my mind tonight.” She said.

“Then it’s a deal. No more talking about it today. Let’s head back and start studying.”

After that the day went about the same as normal.

I had made up my mind during the day and that night after dinner it was time to move ahead. “Well, it is dark out and I’m ready for bed. I think we can skip the movie tonight. What do you think?” I asked her.

She turned to me with a searching look, trying to figure out what my decision was, I figured. “Sure. I’m ready too.” she said, indicating that she also had made her decision.

“See you there.” I said before I climbed up to the ‘bedroom’ and pulled the curtain closed. That was very unusual since there were only the two of us here there wasn’t a reason to close it. I stripped off my clothes and left them in a pile on my side of the bed. Then I climbed under the covers and turned off the light. I really did have trouble deciding what I should do. In the end I realized that my choice came down to the way I thought of Sam. If I choose not to make her my

lover it would be because either I didn't trust her to keep it a secret or I didn't think she was mature enough to decide herself. Everything I had learned about her in the short time we have been together told me that I should trust her to make her own decision.

I didn't have to wait long to find out what it was. I heard her climb the stairs and then pull back the curtain. Then I felt her slide under the covers and lay down on her side of the bed. "Ready, Baby Girl?" I asked.

"Yup." she said quietly and started scooting over. I rolled over to meet her and when I reached out I felt her soft skin under my arms as I pulled her into an embrace. "I knew it!" she said. "I knew you loved me and wanted to be with me."

"Of course I love you sweetie. That was never in doubt. I made my decision because of you." I said and then explained how much I trusted her.

"Oh, I do know what it means and I really did think about it. I am sure I can make sure no one ever finds out. I did really worry that it might mean we could stop loving each other as much later. But then I decided that it could also mean we will love each other more and in new ways. Just like I want to swallow your semen so I could have part of you inside of me, I want to feel your touch and bring you closer to me than any other way could."

"You are truly amazing and so much more mature than I would have thought possible." I declared. I couldn't see it but I know she smiled as she snuggled up even closer to me. "I can't wait to see you blossom into an amazing woman."

She moved her hands lower and felt around until she found my limp penis. "So why aren't you hard? Aren't you excited?" she wondered.

“Yes, of course I am. I’m super duper excited Baby Girl. But I’m excited emotionally and I’m filled with love right now. The lust and physical excitement will come very soon, I promise.” I explained, even as I felt it start as her hand tightened around my cock. “But let go of that for now. It’s your turn. I want you to lay back and let me bring you some pleasure for a change.”

“Oh boy!” she said as she dropped my dick and did as I instructed.

“If I’m going beyond the pale I might as well run!” I joked.

“What does ‘beyond the pale’ mean?” she asked.

“It means we are doing something that is unacceptable behavior in our society. I don’t believe in God, but I’m still praying that I am making the right decision. This will change everything.” Turns out it didn’t change much. We’d already been dipping our toes in the water. Now we were just diving in.

## Chapter 9: A Glorious Start

I was determined to start slowly and gradually try new things with her. I wanted to find out what she liked, and more importantly what she didn't like. At all costs I wanted to avoid forcing her into anything. I really didn't think I'd have to talk her into anything. She was the most adventurous person I'd ever met. In fact, I wondered if I might have to hold her back.

"I'm going to start by just using my hands, like you have been doing with me. A few kisses here and there too, perhaps. Just lay back and enjoy it and don't be afraid to express yourself. Please don't scream or get too loud though. I don't want anyone in the campground to hear us."

"Okay." she nodded.

I started by brushing her hair back and caressing her cheeks. Then I kissed her softly on the lips as my hands moved down to her shoulders. I began to plant little kisses around her head and neck while my hands massaged her shoulders and arms. I kissed her ears and sucked on her earlobes gently as she giggled. When I stuck my tongue in her ear she exclaimed "Hey, that tickles!" so I backed off a little.

I confined my kisses to her head and neck and used only my hands on her body. I gave her a gentle erotic massage, giving as much attention as I could to every area. When I got to her chest I spend a lot of time squeezing and pinching her nipples. That got a few soft moans out of her. Her breasts had not quite come in yet, but there was a tiny hint of development. The next few years were going to be so amazing. I couldn't wait.

Soon I reached her flat belly, pulled tight and stretched by her arms above her head. The softness of her skin was amazing. I fiddled a little with her belly button but I didn't get much reaction so I moved

on. Her hip bones protrude just enough to be sexy, but not enough to look like she isn't getting enough to eat. They weren't very wide right now and her waist wasn't really noticeable, but I knew they would start to open up soon as she developed a more womanly figure. Her pubic mound was so inviting the way it was sticking up, but I bypassed it right now. I'd climb that delectable mountain soon enough.

I worked down her legs fairly quickly. She had soft little hairs on them since she hadn't started to shave yet. I spent some more time on her feet and even sucked on her toes a little. She thought that was very funny and giggled a lot. Then I had her flip over and started to work my way back up. I massaged her calves and hamstrings but kept to the outside of her hips, avoiding her inner thighs and butt for now. I finished my way up her body with a nice back and shoulder massage while I softly kissed her neck.

And now for the real fun. I worked back to her beautiful plump butt and spent several minutes squeezing and massaging it. I even planted a few kisses on the cheeks, breaking my own rules. Then I worked down to her legs and began to stroke her inner thighs as I had her spread her legs. I gently stroked and caressed them, barely touching her pussy lips a few times which resulted in several shudders. Her moans were getting louder and more frequent. I could tell she was really enjoying it.

Next I had her flip over again and keep her legs apart. I worked my fingers around the outside of her vulva and all across her pubic mound. I could feel her tension building as she was beginning to approach a climax. "Oh Daddy!" she moaned between her rapid breaths. I didn't need to put much effort into spreading her pussy as it was already very wet and plump. I stroked her outer lips just a little and when I barely touched her little clit she convulsed with a massive orgasm. "Ahhhhh, yes! Yes! YES!" she cried quietly, but still louder than I liked. I don't know if she had ever cum before but this would have been so much more intense than she had ever experienced. I tried to keep rubbing her pussy but she pushed my hand away.

“No! Stop.” she said. “It’s too much!” She was too sensitive right now for me to do anymore so I backed off. I slid up beside her and held her tightly as the spasms died down. Soon she was just lying there breathing hard, like she had just run a mile. “Oh my God, Daddy! I had no idea it could be like that! It was absolutely amazing. Thank you so, so much.” she said as she rolled over and hugged me back.

“That’s only the beginning, Baby Girl. There is so much more to learn and do. You’ve taken your first steps into the amazing experiences we can have sharing ourselves with each other and bonded by love.”

“Really? Like what? Tell me more.” she begged.

“Not right now. We’ve got lots of time. I want to go slow so you can get the most enjoyment along the way. Trust me, it’ll be better than going too fast.”

“Okay. I trust you.” she said, accepting my greater experience. “So, are you ready for me to make you orgasm too?”

“No, not tonight sweetie. I don’t need to cum right now. I’m enjoying your joy right and I want to savor it.”

“I understand.” she said. “I felt like that when I made you ... cum?” I nodded. “When I made you cum before. I just felt so good and I loved knowing that your semen... I mean cum, was inside of me.”

“Tell you what. Why don’t you wake me up with a nice surprise in the morning?” I suggested.

“Yeah. That sounds like fun.” she agreed before snuggling up with her arms around me and drifting off to sleep. I lay there thinking about how absolutely amazing life was right now. I am the luckiest man on earth, but it comes with a big responsibility. Sam’s future, her

entire life from this point forward was all on me. I vowed to do everything I could to make sure it was full of joy and happiness. I knew that I would have to be the bad guy sometimes and make sure she had some boundaries. I just hoped I could handle the delicate balance between father and lover.

## Chapter 10: A Change of Scenery

True to her word, Sam was busy tugging on my dick when I woke up the next morning. “Is this what you had in mind, Daddy?” she asked with a huge grin.

“Oh yes, Baby Girl. That feels so good.” I replied at the wonderful feelings mixing with the memory of the amazing time we had last night. “Hey, if you want to try something new, use your other hand to play with my balls while you stroke my cock.” She did as I suggested and her other hand was soon cupping my balls and squeezing them. “Woah, not quite so rough. Be gentle and try to caress them.” She backed off and started to gently stroke, squeeze and rub my ballsack. Then she tried to tickle them a little and it felt great. I moaned and I was getting close to busting my nut.

“I’m almost there, sweetheart. Why don’t you try to catch it in your mouth this time?” I suggested.

“Good idea!” she said before she put her head down, opened her mouth and started pumping harder with both hands.

That image was more than enough to push me over the edge and I started to cum. “Oh God, yes! That’s it Baby, shoot it straight in.” It was over in a few seconds and after she licked the last bit off of me she turned and opened her mouth, showing me my load before swallowing it and smiling. “How did you know to do that?” I asked.

“Do what?” she said innocently.

“Collect my entire load in your mouth before showing me and swallowing. It’s something that girls do in porno movies.”

“Oh, really? I didn’t know that. It just seemed to be the right thing to do after you told me to shoot it into my mouth.” she replied.



“Asked you sweetie, not told you.” I pointed out. “I never want you to think you have to do the things I say. It’s your decision, remember? You can say no to anything you don’t want to do. Well, as my lover that is. You do need to do what your Daddy tells you to do. I am still your dad and I am in charge. That’s going to be the most difficult part of this. We have to keep daddy-daughter stuff apart from lover stuff or our relationship will suffer. Do you understand?” I asked, hoping she understood this very important part of our future together.

“Yes, I understand.” she sighed. “It is kind of confusing, but I think I can do it.”

“I hope so Baby Girl, or we could be heading for a disaster.” She frowned at that, so I tried to change the subject and lighten the mood. “So, what is the plan for today. Do you want to go to the beach? How about swimming in the pool or going fishing?”

“Nah.” she said, sourly. “I want to do something different.”

“Fishing? Sailing? Beachcombing?”

“No. We’ve done all that and I want to try something else. I want to try somewhere else.” she decided. “Let’s go someplace else. I’m kind of sick of this campground.”

“Okay. Where do you want to go? What kind of things do you want to do?”

“I want to ride a horse!” she said, excitedly. “I did it a couple of times at home. One of my aunts had a farm with horses on it.”

“That sounds like fun. We need to go someplace in the South though. It’s November now and it is getting colder up North. How about Texas? They have lots of horses in West Texas.”

“Neat! Texas will be fun. Do we have to camp though? I really liked staying in the hotel.”

“Well, that’s kind of problem with Layla. If we camp she can stay with the RV when we go out. She can’t stay in a hotel room all day, only when we are there too.” I said. She looked dejected at that. “I know some people we could stay that would look after Layla for a little while.” That made her perk up. “But we can’t do that until we have all of your papers and you are officially my daughter. We need to finish writing your life story in case people ask, and we need all of the documents so we can make sure the story fits.”

“How much longer until that happens?” she asked.

“A few more weeks. A month at most. That’s not too long after all. Things have happened super fast recently but life doesn’t usually go so fast. We need to start getting used to it going a little slower.”

“Okay, I guess.” she said, accepting that we can’t always control everything. “But let’s go to Texas right away, even if we have to stay in a campground.”

We packed everything up pretty quickly. I left all of the beach things at the campground office. They said they’d put it with the lost and found and that lots of people who stayed grabbed the stuff if they needed it. They said it wouldn’t go to waste and it would be used.

By nightfall we were in Mississippi and just stayed at a rest stop. We masturbated each other again that night, but it wasn’t as special as it was the last time. I expected that. To be honest I wasn’t sure I’d ever have a sexual experience as powerful again. Well, that’s not entirely true. Sam and I had a lot of things we were going to do later, but I figured I’d reach the peak experience for this first stage.

The next day we drove through New Orleans and were astounded at the devastation from Katrina. I told Sam I wanted to stay there a few days to take pictures and work on my book. She agreed and

helped me out the next few days, talking with people and documenting profound changes the city has been undergoing.

Having Sam with me was actually a really big help as people seemed to open up more to her and explained things in simple terms that were perfect for the book. It made me look forward to traveling with Sam even more, knowing that she could be such a help. We didn't do anything in bed while we were there. The things we saw didn't exactly put either of us in the mood.

Texas is huge and it took two days to get across to El Paso, where we had decided to stop. El Paso is right on the border and the people there have a different view of the country. I did a lot of work on the book when we first got there until Sam reminded me about the horses. Before we left I showed Sam some ways she could masturbate herself. I showed her how a lot of young girls used an electric toothbrush as their first vibrator and she had a lot of fun with it. I jacked off next to her while she did and she took my whole load in her mouth again. Cleanup had never been so easy.

We soon found a ranch that taught people to ride. They had even taught a bunch of movie stars, but there wasn't anyone famous there right then, disappointing Sam. It was a two week course and by the end of it both Sam and I had gotten pretty good at controlling a horse. We learned how to act around horses and be safe. We were so sore and tired at the end of each day that we didn't feel like fooling around in bed very often. She gave me a couple of handjobs and I 'flicked her bean' a few times. I heard her using her toothbrush a few times, and not on her teeth. By the end of the course she'd had enough of horses for now and we went back to the RV trying to decide where to go next.

We grabbed some Tex-Mex on the way back and I checked my phone messages when we sat down to eat. "Cool! Great news Baby Girl. Your adoption papers are done. You are officially my daughter."

"Yay! So when can I go and meet some of your friends?" she asked.

“As soon as we get the documents and finish your life story. There’s an old classmate of mine from college who lives in Austin. He’s been wanting me to visit for years. Lets go get a hotel in Austin and I can have the papers sent there. We’ll head out in the morning. It’ll take the whole day to drive to Austin.” I concluded. “Do you feel like trying something new our last night here?”

“Oh yeah!” she said in a kind of sultry and sexy way that kind of surprised me. “What are we going to do?”

“Well, I thought we could put some of these horseback riding lessons to work. Tonight you get to be a cowgirl and do some grinding!” I said, my mind already picturing it in my head. Don’t worry. You’ll like it.” I promised in response to her puzzled look.

I pulled out my laptop and made a reservation at a nice hotel on the Western side of Austin. Then I called the front desk and got the address so I could have a package sent there next-day. Since I had two official copies of each document made I decided to have the second one sent somewhere else, just in case there was a problem. I was able to get a virtual address at one of those shipping places without any issues. Then I contacted the group I had hired and they said they would send them out the next day, so they would arrive the day after. I thanked them for their discrete services and let them know this would be the last contact unless there was a problem getting the stuff.

With all of that done we took showers to clean ourselves up and settled in for the night. I was looking forward to teaching Sam something new. “So far we’ve used our hands to give each other pleasure. You figured it out yourself and I’m so glad you did. Tonight you are going to use your pussy to rub my dick instead of your hands.”

“Are you going to put your dick inside of me? I can’t wait to feel you inside of me!” she said, giddy with anticipation.

“No, you are not ready for me to stick my dick inside of you yet. You are very mature and sexually gifted for your age, but your body needs to catch up. With some work it would be possible, but your vagina isn’t deep enough yet for me to put it all in. It would also stretch you open and I’d prefer to keep your pussy nice and tight. They’ll be plenty of time for that when your body develops a little more.” I tried to explain.

“Okay. I don’t want to stretch my pussy out either. I want to keep it nice and tight so you can fuck me every day later.” Hearing those words come out of her innocent little mouth was quite a turn on. “So how do I rub my pussy on your dick?” she asked, excited to get going.

“Well, why don’t you start by getting me really hard.” I directed. “Nope. Not with your hands this time. I want you to do a sexy dance for me. Make me want you without touching me.”

“Oh. That sounds neat. Get ready Daddy, you’re in for a great show.” She jumped up and started by imitating some of the stuff she had seen on TV and the moves. She swayed her hips back and forth while she hugged herself. Then she ran her hands up and down her body, still swaying. After that she stopped moving her hips and started to play with her tiny little tits. She was even able to get her tongue down far enough to lick her nipples. I was slowly stroking my cock as it started getting hard.

“Do you want me Daddy? I know you do.” she teased. “I want you to shoot your hot white load right into my mouth! I want to feel your warm cum sliding down my throat.” Wow, this little girl was so fucking amazing! How does she do it? “How about my ass, Daddy?” she said as she turned around. She started rubbing and squeezing it, even spanking herself a couple of times. I was really getting hard now. “Here’s a little taste of what I know you want!” she said finally as she bent over and spread her ass cheeks wide, showing my her tight little pink asshole and gaping pussy.

“Wow Baby Girl! That was amazing. You do know what I want and you’ve got me hard as a rock.” I said, waving my cock at her. Okay, now turn around and stand over me. That’s it, now sit down like you’re mounting a horse.” She did as directed and I held my cock against my stomach as she settled her hot, wet pussy on top of it. “This is called the cowgirl position.” She giggled at that. “And if you turned around so you were facing away from me it would be the reverse cowgirl position.”

“I like it! I can feel your dick mashed into my pussy. Hey, your hotdog is in my bun!” she said, laughing loudly at her own joke. It was kind of funny, and quite astute for one so young. She keeps amazing me so often I should be used to it. I hoped I never am. “Now what do I do?”

“Now you slide your pussy up and down my cock. That’s the grinding I was talking about. That’s it. Start with nice long and slow strokes. Use your hips.” She picked it up pretty quickly and soon she had a great rhythm going from one end of my dick to the other. It was amazing to feel and more amazing to watch. Her hairless little slit was stroking up and down as her stomach muscles contracted and released under her taut belly. It was captivating.

“Oh, that is so good Baby. You are a natural. Now another great thing about this position is that our hands are free.” I said as I reached up and started squeezing her little titties and pinching her nipples. She started rubbing her hands on my stomach and chest. “I have nipples too, you know, and they are very sensitive. I would love it if you could play with them and flick them with your fingers.” She moved her hands and started to play with my nipples and I started to moan loudly.”

“This feels so good Daddy! I love that your cock is right there by my pussy. I’m getting close to cuming.” she prompted.

“Me too, Baby. Go ahead and start going faster, building it up. If we time it right we can both cum at the same time, and that is such an

awesome feeling. Sharing a special moment like that can really bring us closer together.”

“Okay, I’ll try.” she said between breaths. She was breathing hard now and I knew she was going to cum soon. I tried to concentrate on building myself up and I reached around her to start squeezing her sweet ass. “Oh yes Daddy! Yes, yes, yes. Keep going... I can feel....Ahhhhh” she cried as her climax hit her full force. She had stopped stroking but the feeling of her convulsing pussy sent me over the edge too.”

“Oh God. Oh God. I love you so much.” I said before I pulled her to me and kissed her deeply. I let my tongue brush on her lips and I felt them part as our mouths opened a little.. Her tongue was soon dancing with mine and I enjoyed our embrace as we shared our first french kiss. We were both breathing hard through our noses so we soon broke off and gasped for air. “Oh my darling Sam, you are the best thing that ever happened to me. I don’t ever want to let you go. I wish I could just lay her with you forever.”

“Me too, Daddy. I feel the same way about you. I am so happy right now.” We held each other for what could have been one minute or ten minutes. We were both just enjoying our post fuck cuddle in each other’s arms. “Okay,” she said finally, “Time for dessert.” She moved off of me and moved her head down to drink my cum, as she always did. Then she noticed that it wasn’t the same as it usually was. It was a runny mess and she frowned at it and then me. “What happened to it?”

“Well, cum doesn’t stay all nice and pearly forever. Semen is a mixture that forms right at the climax and it starts to separate slowly after it comes out.” I explained. “In fact, if a man cums a couple of times in a row the semen changes a little each time it comes out. The body runs out of some of the stuff and it has to build it back up.”

“I’m not happy about that. I want to swallow your cum. I want it in my belly. I want you to be part of me.” she said, very unhappy.

“Is that why you like to swallow my cum so much? You want part of me to be part of you?” I asked as it finally started to click.

“Yes, of course. If I swallow your cum then I digest it and then a part of you becomes part of me. I can’t get any closer to you than that.” she said, thinking she was explaining the obvious.

“Oh Baby Girl, that is amazing! I have never heard of someone saying that. It seems so obvious now that you explained it. Because you swallow my cum I am literally part of you, part of your very body. That is so deep.” I was absolutely amazed once again. “You are adopted and not my biological daughter. That never really mattered to me; I love you so much it didn’t matter if you came from me or not. But now when I look at you I know that part of you really is part of me. I am inside of you, part of your very being. Wow!”

“So you didn’t know what I meant when I said I wanted you to be inside of me, to be a part of me?” I shook my head. “Well now you know, I guess. You are part of me and I will never let you go!”

“And I will never let go of you Baby Girl. Never in a million years.” We fell asleep in each other’s arms, like we had many times before. But this time I felt even closer to this amazing little angel.



## Chapter 11: 2-Gether 4-Ever

We packed everything up the next morning and we were on the road by 8 AM. It was a long drive but I planned plenty of stops to stretch our legs and walk Layla. I stayed off of the Interstate, taking the road less traveled, I guess. I was able to see more of Texas and take more pictures. We even talked to some people on our stop for lunch at a local diner and I got some good stuff for my book. After lunch we were on a long straight stretch of road that seemed to go on forever. There were very few other cars and I hoped we didn't break down.

"Hey Daddy." she said. "I'm hungry and I want a snack." The way she asked seemed a little strange. What did she have in mind?

"Of course. You know where they are in the cooler. You get them all of the time."

"Not one of those snacks." she said in a playful voice. "Since I didn't get my dessert last night I thought I could get myself a little treat now. It's only fair!" she said, giggling.

I've always had this fantasy, a little something special while driving down the highway. But it had always been a blowjob, not a handjob. Then again it was with a grown woman, not a 10 year old girl. "Well, as your Daddy I would have to say that is very dangerous and we should definitely not try it." She started to frown. "But as your lover I say Fuck Yeah! Tug away Baby Girl!"

"Mmmmm. I'm starving. Time to get me some!" She unbuckled her seat belt as I pushed my seat all the way back, leaned it back and moved the steering wheel out of the way. I was already on cruise control so I just had to keep it going straight down the road. Then I unbuckled my pants and slid them down to my knees. As I leaned back to give her access I was already getting hard. "You just concentrate on driving while I do a little 'milking'."

Her soft hands took hold of my cock and got to work. She had gotten very good at handjobs and knew just what I liked. She leaned over me and her butt was facing the passenger window. I reached behind her and tried to pull down her pants. She figured out what I had in mind and stopped long enough to pull her pants down as well. She got back to work tugging me as I got to work rubbing her beautiful little slit. “That feels good Daddy. You can put a finger in if you want. I can get two of mine in now.”

“You’ve been practicing on your own, eh?” I said. “Good for you. You need to get to know your body and what it likes.” I slowly slipped my middle finger into her hot little hole. It still felt so tight. It didn’t take long before I felt her shiver and gasp with a little orgasm. Not an earth-shattering one like last night, but I nice little moment of joy. She started tugging harder and began playing with my balls. That drove me over the edge. “Here it comes Baby Girl. A little snack fresh from the source... Ahhhhh. Yes.”

She had shot it all straight into her mouth and I heard her swallow. “Ah. That hits the spot.” she said, smiling.

“Plenty more where that came from.” I joked and we laughed. We pulled our clothes back on and were sitting in our seats in no time. Then she unbuckled again and slid over to me. She didn’t say a word but just pulled my arm around her and put her head on my shoulder. I squeezed her with my arm and brought my hand up to stroke her hair. “I don’t know what the future may be Baby, but as long as I have you here with me it will be better than I ever thought possible before I met you. I wish I could just save moments like this so I could relive them over and over forever.”

That night we got to the hotel to find out the pool was already closed. “Do you have any suites with a hot tub?” I asked.

“Yes, of course. Would you like to upgrade?”

Five minutes later we were in the room and Sam was trying to figure out how to fill up the hot tub. I tipped the bellhop and put out the do not disturb sign. I helped Sam get the setting right and the hot tub started to fill up. It was a big tub and it was going to take a while so we sat down and kept working on her life story. She was sitting on my lap and had her arms around me head.

She kissed me on the cheek and looked at the notepad again. I kissed her on the cheek and did the same. It became a game and we did it four or five more times. Then on my turn she turned her head right away so we kissed on the lips. We both started laughing without breaking the kiss. Then I put down the notebook and brought my hands up around her, pulling her tighter. Soon our kiss got very passionate as our tongues explored each other's mouth. Then I broke the kiss and started kissing her all over her face and neck, licking every now and then with my tongue.

She let go of me, stood up and started striping. I did the same. We finished and we climbed on the bed and started kissing again. She was laying on top of me and my dick was between her legs, right through her thigh gap. She pulled her legs together, squeezing my cock and started pumping her pelvis up and down, stroking my cock between her legs and her pussy. After a few minutes she got tired and stopped.

I lifted her up and laid her on her back at the edge of the bed with her butt just over the edge. I lifted her legs straight up and kept them together as I slip my cock back in her thigh gap. I looked her in the eyes and she licked her lips like she was craving more cock juice. "I love you so much Daddy. Please fuck me harder! Fuck your little girl!" It didn't take long with encouragement like that. I started pumping faster and before I knew it, I pulled back and waited. She flipped around on the bed so she was on her back with her head hanging off. She opened her mouth wide and I filled it up.

I stepped back, exhausted. Then she surprised me again. She sat up with her head still held back. She gargled with my cum! Even

waving her tongue back and forth in her mouth, before swallowing. She turned around, hopped off the bed and walked up to me. Then she jumped up and wrapped her legs around my waist so I had to catch her. She pulled herself up so she was looking me square in the eyes. “Betcha didn’t expect that, did you?” she declared and proceeded to kiss me again, deep and long.

“I don’t know where you come from,” I said when she finally let me go, “but you can’t be human.” Now she furrowed her brow and gave me a bewildered look. “Some advanced aliens must have studied me and built the perfect companion for me.” Now she started smiling when she figured out I was joking. “But they did too perfect of a job. Nothing in this world could possible be as amazing and wonderful as you.” That brought out a really big grin and she hugged me harder. “I’m not giving you back though! You’re mine Baby Girl. Now and forever!” I hugged her so hard she started hitting me.

“Let me go Daddy! I can’t breathe.” she demanded.

I did as I was told and gazed into her eyes, drinking in the beautiful, wonderful girl who had shaken my world to the core. “Sorry Sam. I just got overcome with emotion. You really are amazing and I hope you always know how much I adore you.”

She smiled and climbed down. Then she ran to the hot tub and turned off the water. “It’s full. Let’s try it out!” I knew she had never seen one before, let alone been in one. She lifted her leg over the side and slowly dipped it in. “It’s hot but it feels good. Ahhhhhh.” she said as she settled herself in.

I walked over and slowly climbed in. It did feel good on my muscles. They were still a little sore from the ranch. Sam played footsie with me for a bit and then splashed me. “Hey now. Not here. This isn’t a pool. We don’t want to splash all over the hotel room, do we?” I chided her. If you don’t be good I won’t show you the best part of a hot tub. I know you are going to just love it!” I teased with a devilish grin.

“There’s more? What is it? I’ll be good, I promise. Tell me please, Daddy!” she begged.

“Okay, okay. Come over here first.” I told her since I wanted to maximize the surprise. “Now turn like this and sit her.” I had lined her up in front of one of the jets. “Okay. Are you ready?” I asked as I moved over to the controls. She nodded and I turn the water jets on. The pumps turn on and started to groan as the waterflow started to grow.

She was startled at first but when the waterjet started to hit her pussy she got the most amazing look on her face. Part terror, part pleasure, part surprise. Soon she started to figure out how to get the best result out of the jets and she started adjusting her position. She tried quite a few before one seemed to hit her just right and she froze in place. I glided over to her. “Do you like it?” I asked.

“Oh God yes! This is amazing. It’s warm and pulsing and... ooooooo.” she moaned. I glided in behind her and reached my hand around to her chest. I started to play with her nipples as I kissed her on the neck. She started to shake. Then I managed to slide my cock under her butt and just stroked it back and forth along the crack. I was almost sure I wouldn’t be able to blow another load today but I wanted to make this experience even better for her and joining in to share the fun would do that. The shaking got stronger and soon I could feel her convulse, climaxing yet again today. Then she pushed herself away quickly and turned to face me.

“I couldn’t take anymore, it was too much again. Oh Daddy, thank you. That was a wonderful surprise and it felt even better with you holding me.” She hugged me again. “Now I’m too hot. Let’s get out and take a cold shower.”

“I don’t know about cold, but we can keep it low enough to cool us off. No running!” I yelled as she took off for the shower. We shared our shower and soaped each other up as we normally did

anytime we could share a shower. She liked to play with my dick and always lathered it up real good. It didn't react like it usually did.

“I think I broke it.” she joked.

I laughed at that. “Well, it's shot three loads in the last 24 hours. It needs a rest too.”

“Okay, I guess I've had enough...for Now!” she teased. “Let's get to bed. Looks like you need to rest up.”

Another night in the arms of the most beautiful, amazing girl in the world. God, was I spoiled.

## Chapter 12: Sam's New Friend

Sam woke up before me the following morning. I woke up when I hear a buzzing noise. I opened my eyes up to a wonderful sight. Sam was in the chair across from the bed with her feet up and was using her toothbrush as a vibrator on that adorable little pussy of hers. She had her eyes closed and was looking up. I wondered what she was fantasizing about, but I wasn't going to ask. I think that is something private. If somebody wants to share it, that is up to them but no one should make them through guilt or other pressure. I didn't need to fantasize lately; I was living a fantasy.

She opened her eyes for a second and saw me, but she didn't stop. She looked at me with a look that made me wonder if she was fantasizing about me. I laughed to myself and realized just how egotistical that thought was and decided it didn't matter. Whatever made her happy also made me happy. I gave her a loving and supporting look that let her know I wanted her to continue. She did, and she looked at me the whole time. When she finally came she finished calling out "Yes, yes Daddy. Fuck me harder!" which told me I was right, but I didn't want it to go to my head.

I got up and walked over to her, leaned over and kissed her forehead and said "I love you, Baby Girl. You sure started early. I don't know where you get all of that energy. You are going to wear me out!"

"I'm just so excited right now. I have to channel that excitement somewhere." she said, very astutely.

"Excited to officially be my Daughter?" I asked. She nodded. "Well, the papers should be her by 10:00. Then we can verify everything is right and fill in the missing holes in your life story. Then you need to study it very hard and memorize it. That's very important." She frowned. I heard a knock on the door. "Hop under the

covers and pretend you're asleep." I told her as I grabbed a pair of shorts and put them on.

When I cracked the door there was a FedEx man at the door with a package. I signed for it and closed the door. "Good news Baby Girl. Here it is." I tore open the package and looked the contents over. Everything seemed to be in order. "Looks like I adopted you two weeks ago. Wow, that's recent. You were in an orphanage in Minneapolis. It doesn't have a lot of details. That's good. Your name got changed too so you are now Samantha Jane Rogers." I informed her.

"Yeah. You are my Daddy for real now, right?"

"I sure am. So, we have your history complete up until last Christmas. Let's figure out the last year. We need to know why you were in an orphanage." I started to think of something plausible.

"I think it is because my Dad killed my Mom, and then killed himself." she said with no emotion.

"Wow! That's pretty dark, Baby Girl. I don't think something so... Wait. That might work. If anyone brings it up or asks you just get really sad and say you don't want to talk about it. Maybe even start to cry if you can. That will stop people from trying to find out too much. Wait, how about this: your Dad did kill himself a couple of years ago, but not your mom. I started dating your mom last year and we were going to get married. I was going to adopt you after we got married but your mom was killed in a car accident. Since neither your mom or dad had any family I was able to get the court to let me adopt you, since that was what we had planned after the marriage anyway."

"I like it. It will explain why your aren't dating anyone else right now."

"Oh, yeah. I hadn't thought about that. You sure are smart. Okay, let's get this all down and then you can start to memorize it."



After we finished that I gave my friend Pete Meyer a call. He and I were in school together and joined the same Fraternity. He and Jesse got married right after graduation. In fact, Pete got Jesse pregnant Senior year and she went to graduation 7 months pregnant. Beth was born that summer and Pete got a job at Dell. I'd kept in touch with him, but we haven't seen each other since school. He said he'd love to see me and that I should come over tomorrow, which was Saturday. I told him I had a surprise to show him but I didn't tell him about Sam.

We went over there at lunchtime the next day. Pete met me at the door and was really shocked to see Sam there holding Layla's leash. We went in and made introductions. Sam and Beth hit it off right away and soon they went off to Beth's room. Pete and I talked all afternoon. Jesse was in and out of the conversation since she was also looking after Tyler, Beth's 7 year old brother. Tyler fell in love with Layla and had her out playing in the backyard. Pete was fascinated with the books I was writing. He had lots of ideas which I really did plan to use.

They invited us to stay for dinner and that's when Sam and I told them the story we had made up. They both felt really bad about Sam's mom and were so glad that I still adopted Sam after the accident. The story worked perfectly and explained everything away. Beth wanted Sam to have a sleepover and Pete offered me the guest bedroom. Layla slept in Tyler's room and I slept alone for the first time in years. Sam did come see me in the middle of the night. She had told Beth she had a nightmare and wanted to be with me for a while. We had some very quiet fun together, both of us kind of turned on by the situation. Sam went back to Beth's room after, telling her she felt better now.

The next morning over breakfast I told Pete and Jesse how I wanted to take Sam to some special places like Disneyworld to cheer her up but that I couldn't because we didn't have a place for Layla to stay. They both leaped at the idea of Layla staying with them. Tyler loved her being there and Layla seemed to enjoy it too. Layla had been

my only companion for a long time and I felt really bad about ditching her for a while, but my life has been completely upended by Sam and I knew it wasn't for long. I was not giving Layla away, she meant too much to me... and to Sam.

Pete and Jesse had a big yard with lots of space. Enough to park an RV and a truck. I told them I was going to put them in a storage lot while we were gone but that I could let them use it to do some traveling while we were gone. They all thought that was a wonderful idea and we made all of the arrangements. Since they were going to use the RV and truck they wouldn't let me leave them any money for Layla. They got the better of that deal for sure.

I booked us a flight to Florida for the following day and Sam wanted to spend the night again. I was glad she had found a friend her own age to spend time with so I agreed. Sam and Beth were giggling together all of the time. There was something going on there but I trusted Sam and I figured I she would tell me about it later. I checked out of the hotel and brought the RV over. I showed Pete how it all worked and he drove around the neighborhood a few times to be sure he had the hang of it. Sam and I packed a light bag for our trip and put everything else into some boxes Pete stored in his basement. The RV was all ready for them to hit the road and they were all looking forward to it. I was glad.

Sam and I agreed that she shouldn't come visit me that night. We didn't want to push our luck too much. The next morning Pete went back to work and Jesse drove us to the airport in their minivan. Sam was really looking forward to flying for the first time. She didn't even mind all of the crap it takes to get through an airport these days. It was all so new and exciting for her. She had a window seat and spent most of the trip staring out of it. It was a clear day so she had a great view the entire flight.

I booked one of those super all-inclusive Disney packages that included everything. We stayed at the Grand Floridian resort so we could just ride the monorail all around. We were both kind of beat

after checking in so we just stayed in the room that night. Sam told me what she and Beth had been up to. Pete and Jesse didn't know it but Beth was quite a naughty little girl.

She showed Sam how she would go online to a site called Stickam. She would video chat with random people and sometimes it went pretty far. She told Sam she had gotten naked a bunch of times and seen all kinds of things on the other side, including a lot of men masturbating. That didn't surprise me. Sam joined in and actually showed Beth how she masturbated. Beth had a toothbrush too, but she hadn't yet figured out what she could do with it.

Last night it went even further. Some of the people online got Sam and Beth to kiss each other. Sam got into it and Beth did too after a while. I was starting to get very hard listening to her describe it. Eventually they rubbed each other's pussies and Sam had been able to cum. She couldn't get Beth all the way there though and she felt kind of bad about that. I was rubbing myself now listening. Sam noticed and got a wicked look in her eye. "I didn't forget you, Daddy. I got a little present for you." she said as she pulled out her iphone. She showed me some pictures she had taken of herself and Beth. I was enthralled. Beth was a little more developed than Sam, but just a tiny bit. Her little tities were noticeable, but still not enough to really hold in your hand. "Doesn't Beth look hot? Her butt felt so nice when I squeezed it." she said as she unbuckled my belt and pulled down my pants.

I was getting really hard now. Some of the pictures were close ups of both of the girls. I was so familiar with Sam's little pussy that it was easy to tell the two apart. In one of the pictures I saw two of Sam's fingers in Beth's pussy, pushed up to the second knuckle. "Now that you've seen the pictures I want you to close your eyes, lean back and let me take you into the fantasy I know you must be thinking about." I did as she instructed and she started to rub her hands all over my body. "You're asleep, but you wake up to feel a young girl's hand squeezing your dick and playing with it. You think it is me but then you hear a giggle that doesn't sound like me. 'It feels so weird.' a

strange voice says. ‘Yeah, I know. It’s so soft and hard at the same time.’ you hear me respond.”

She starts playing with my dick just like in her story and in my mind I see Beth’s hand exploring my hard cock. “‘Stroke it up and down. No, not so fast. Slower and more gentle.’ I tell her. ‘That’s it, nice slow strokes. Here, let me help.’ I say as another hand grabs your dick and starts to stroke it.” She even uses a different voice for Beth and in my mind I can see them both. “Mmmm” I hear as Sam does her best to imitate kissing noises. “‘You taste so good. I love the feel of your soft lips on mine.’ I tell her.” Now I can see them kissing in my head, just like in some of the pictures. I started moaning loudly and I could have cum right then. But I held it back and continued listening to the magical fantasy Sam was creating for me.

“‘Okay, you’ve got it now’ I say as I pull my hand away. ‘Now what happens.’ Beth asks me. ‘He’s gonna cum real soon. I normally swallow all of it, but I can share if you want to try.’ I tell her. ‘Okay. I’ve always wondered what cum tastes like.’ she says. ‘Use both hands now.’ I tell Beth.” Another hand grabs my dick and in my head I see Beth stroking me with both of her hands. She starts stroking faster. “‘That’s it. Keep going. He’s almost there.’ I say as she pumps harder.” In my head it is Beth who is pumping away and I let go as I empty my load. I feel her lips on the head of my cock, sucking it all in. She swallows it quickly but then says “‘You open your eyes to peek, just in time to see Beth and I kiss, my mouth open and full of your delicious cum. “‘Mmmmm’ Beth moans as she accepts the cum I deposit into her mouth.”

Holy Fucking Christ! I think to myself as I listen to her finish her little story. “‘So how did you like giving your first handjob?’ I ask her as she settles back and licks her lips clean. ‘It was great and the taste of your Dad’s cum is awesome. Will you share more with me later?’ she asks me. ‘Any time. There’s plenty to share.’ I say as we sneak out of bed and back into Beth’s room.” I heard some familiar noises as I opened my eyes to see Sam rubbing her pussy like mad. “‘Oh God, yes! That feels so good Beth!’” she says as she reaches her climax and

starts to spasm. I sit up and kiss her deep on the lips as I feel her orgasm subside. “How was that Daddy?” she asked when she finally opened her eyes.

“Oh Baby Girl. That was absolutely amazing! How did you manage to come up with that? It was the most real fantasy I ever experienced.” I told her, still flabbergasted.

“I read about how to please your man online.” she said flatly. “They had lots of suggestions but most of them were things we haven’t done yet. I knew you’d get turned on by those pictures of Beth. They turn me on! I figured I could use them to make up a fantasy for you.”

“Well, I’m glad to see you’re putting that phone to good use!” I joked. “But remember that all of those pictures get sent up to the cloud. I would be surprised if some hacker hasn’t stolen them. Heck, he and his friends are probably fapping to them right now!”

“Really!” she said. “That is so hot! I think I might masturbate again right now! Do you want to take pictures?” she asked. I think she was serious.

“No!” I said, a little too forcefully. She looked concerned, wondering what she did wrong. “Oh, don’t get upset Baby Girl. I’m not really angry. It is just that we are trying to keep a low profile, remember? I’ll change the settings on your phone to keep all of that stuff private. We can back them up ourselves if you really want to keep them, but securely so we are the only ones who can look at them.”

“I guess that’s a good idea. I don’t want to get us caught. I was very careful not to give anything away to Beth. She thinks I’m just like her and that you would be really mad if you found out what we did. “

“Well, I bet somebody has a copy of the things you did online as well. There are people on the Internet who share that kind of stuff and you both could be all over out there anyway.” I said, a little concerned. “Since it was just you two we don’t have to worry about anyone learning about us. But if someone figures out who Beth is and someone who knows her finds out, she could get in trouble.”

“Really, there are places that have pictures like that? Can we go get some? I want to see what everyone else is doing.” she said, hopefully.

“You’re serious? You want me to find some child porn for you to watch?” I asked, stunned. She nodded. “Well, I guess we could do that, but only the right kind of stuff. There is some horrible stuff out there too and I don’t want to see any of it. I don’t want you to see it either.”

“But we can get the naked girls and boys and the sex stuff, right?”

“Well, I’ve never been into boys, but I can see how you would be. We can look later. I have to be very, very careful doing that. I should probably buy another laptop just for that and make it super secure. We’ll do it a little while later sweetie, just not real soon. Is that okay? I asked.

“Yeah. Just don’t forget. Now let’s take a shower and get to bed. Tomorrow I get to meet Cinderella!”

## Chapter 13: The Most Magical Place on Earth

Sam loved it. I did too, actually. I was still kind of a kid at heart and I embraced that with Sam. We didn't plan anything, just ran all over the place doing whatever seemed good at the time. She did get to meet Cinderella, and Snow White, and Sleeping Beauty, and Belle and every other Disney princess. It was kind of nice to see her being a kid, instead of the sex obsessed little fuck angel she was most of the rest of the time.

The waterpark was great. She looked sexy as hell to me in her bikini, but then she always looks sexy to me. She was followed around by several boys I noticed, some trying to hide their boners in their swimsuits. I laughed at that. She was always going to attract a lot of attention. I even saw some grown men stealing some looks and I realized that attraction to young girls is a lot more common than most people realize. If only they knew what she did with me they'd be bowing at my feet.

That night I decided it was time to move to the next stage in Sam's sexual development. She was going to learn about oral sex and I really looking forward to some great blowjobs. "You sure look worn out." I told her as he got back to the room. I hope you're not too tired to try something new tonight." I teased her.

"What? Really? What are we going to try next?" she asked, suddenly full of energy again. Where does she get it all?

Tonight we are going to use our mouths for more than just kissing." I said. "Time for me to taste your tangy twat!" She giggled. "Twice!" I added. She laughed out loud at that.

"I'm sure you can do more than that, can't you?" she taunted.

"Twelve times? Twenty? Two hundred? That sounds good." I said before I picked her up and tossed her up on the bed. "Two

hundred and Twenty Two Tastes of a Twitching Tween's Tangy Twat!" I said laughing as I jumped into bed beside her. We both started laughing uncontrollably at that and rolled around the bed.

After things calmed down I turned over, and kissed her softly on the lips. Then I started kissing all over her head and neck, working down. "Oral Sex \*smooch\* is the \*smooch\* natural \*nibble\* progression \*smooch\* of lovers \*lick\* kissing." I went on educating her as worked my down, up and all around her gorgeous little body, avoiding her pussy for now. "Our mouths are warm and wet, and very sensitive. It is a very intimate type of contact, even more intimate than our genitals in many ways. It can be very soft and subtle like this, or more aggressive and intense like this." I said as I bit one of her nipples, but not too hard.

"Different people have different erogenous zones around their body where they are more sensitive. Like here \*kissing breasts\*, here \*sucking earlobes\*, here \*kissing lips\*, here \*licking belly button\*. Even here \*kissing along arm\*, here \*soft kisses on bottoms of her feet\* and here \*kissing left hand and slowly sucking each finger\*." I could feel her tremble. She was putty in my hands. "Of course the most sensitive areas are down here." I said as I spread her legs apart and lifted her knees up.

I started at one knee and kissed my way to her inner thigh, then did the other side. Then I worked around her vulva, careful not to put her over the edge yet. She was so close to climax I had to stop many times and go back out to other parts of her body so she could settle back down. I wanted this to be the most intense, powerful orgasm her little body ever had. I had to be very slow opening up her labia with my fingers and exposing her clit. She was almost there and I knew this was going to put her over the edge. I tried to do the lightest tiny lick I could manage and she almost went. Then I just blew on it lightly with my hot breath and that almost did it. Finally I pursed my lips and kissed her little clit, gently sucking it in and out. That did it of course. I held onto her as wave after wave rolled over her. She even yelled a little, but not too loud.



When she finally stopped convulsing I put her legs back together and slid up beside her, pulling her into a tight embrace. I just lay there and held her head on my chest, marveling at the miraculous little angel. I would do anything for her, Anything. She fell asleep in my arms and didn't wake up until morning. She had been completely overwhelmed. I woke up to find her laying next to me with her eyes open, just staring at my face. It would have been creepy with most people but with her it was precious beyond measure.

"I love you Daddy." she said simply before leaning forward and kissing me on the forehead.

It seemed a little weird at first since she almost always kissed me on the lips. Then I realized that she was probably still at a loss for words after last night. Kissing my forehead became something special since she normally kissed on the lips. "And I love you, Baby Girl. Now and forever. Are you feeling better? Have you recovered from last night?" I asked.

"Yes, I'm feeling better but I don't know if I'll ever recover from last night. I didn't know such feelings were possible. You barely touched my pussy at all and I absolutely exploded!" she said, amazed.

"I could have made you climax without ever touching your pussy, but I wanted to make that the big ending. It wasn't easy to keep you from cuming too soon."

"Yeah!" she exclaimed. "You kept making it last longer and longer. Part of me wanted to tell you to hurry up, I wanted it so bad. But the way it kept building higher and higher. It just made the ending so much more than I thought it could ever be. Daddy, you are amazing. Definitely the best lover I ever had." she said with a perfectly straight face. She held it for about three seconds before busting out laughing. I laughed too, but after a minute I realized that joke wasn't completely crazy. She and Beth had been lovers too, I remembered. In a way.

“Always remember, the biggest and most powerful sex organ is right here.” I said, tapping on the side of my head. “Our brains can drive us to orgasm without any physical stimulation at all. Teenage boys will have a wet dream and cum in their sleep sometimes if they haven’t learned to jerk off, or can’t for a long time. That’s nature’s way of clearing the pipes so new sperm can replace the older ones. That fantasy you played out for me when we first arrived is a good example. Most of that took place in my head.”

“So you are saying I fucked with your head?” she asked with a wide grin on her face.

“Hey! Leave the dad jokes to me, young lady!” I said in a mock disapproving tone. “Come on. Let’s get some breakfast and head to EPCOT. Let’s see if you can ride up in the front of the monorail.” That got her excited and moving.

It was another fun day. I was curious which country Sam was going to like best. It was Norway. She really liked the trolls. I bought her a giant stuffed troll which they delivered to our hotel room. She loved the fireworks at the end of the evening. She even sat on my shoulders. Knowing her sweet little puss was pressed up on my neck gave me a special thrill. After they were over she lifted my head up and bent down to give me a kiss. “Should I take off my pants and turn around?” she teased, almost reading my mind.

Back at the room we decided we were both too tired from the day to fool around. I suggested we just spend the next day in the hotel and relax a little. They have a nice pool and we decided we would do some swimming as well. But we both knew we were going to spend part of that day in bed and we would not be sleeping. I went to sleep with her body in my arms and visions of her beautiful face in my head.

I woke to the feeling of soft warm kisses on my lips and around my face. The kisses stopped and I opened my eyes to see her warm brown eyes looking back at me. “Good morning Daddy. Do you mind

if I kiss you all over?” she said with a mischievous grin. She didn’t even wait for an answer before she was kissing me all over again. I closed my eyes and let myself get lost in the glorious feeling of her tender lips all over my body.

She started by mimicking my technique from two days before. She changed things up a little as she found her footing, or maybe mouthing? I approved of her changes and tried to just enjoy it. When she finished everything else she moved to my cock. She hadn’t touched it yet and so it was still soft. She started by just kissing it up and down the length. Then she kissed and licked my balls for a bit before returning to my growing dick.

She lifted it up with her hand and kissed the tip, gently. Then she licked it, slowly while looking right at me. God Damn! She was such a natural. She started licking around the head, then working down to the base. A few licks under my balls and then licking back up to the head. I just smiled and watch, approvingly. Then came the big step, she opened her mouth wide and put it around the head. She closed her lips and sucked. It felt great at first but she didn’t move her mouth around, she just started sucking harder. Maybe she wasn’t such a natural afterall. Wonderful presentation but poor technique.

“You don’t need to suck so hard, Baby Girl. Just slide your lips up and down like you do with your hands.” I coached her. “Ahh, yeah. That’s better. Use your tongue to rub up and down inside your mouth.” She was starting to get the hang of it. It was her first blowjob and I don’t think she’d seen any pornos. I decided I’d get some so she could learn some technique. Then she tried to go to far down and started to gag. “Woah, don’t try and go too far down right away. That’s a more advanced skill and most women can’t master it.”

“Okay.” she coughed. “How do you like it Daddy?” she asked after she recovered.

“You’re doing great, Baby. Use your hands on the bottom like you do for the handjobs and just suck on the head. Use your tongue

too.” She did as I suggested and it was feeling good. “Oh yeah. Just keep that up. Yes.”

It didn't take long after that and I shot yet another load into that beautiful mouth. This time she was pretty far down on me and it hit her all the way in the back of her throat. She started gagging again and pulled it out before I had finished. When I finished and looked down it almost broke my heart. She looked really sad and I could tell she felt like a failure. “Oh Baby Girl!” I exclaimed and reached out to grab her. She put her arms up so I could pull her onto me in a huge embrace. “Don't get so upset. You did great.” I said, trying to cheer her up.

“You're just saying that. I wanted it to be so great. I wanted you to feel so good, like the way you made me feel. I couldn't even finish it right.” She started crying.

“Oh my God, Baby Girl. This was only your first blowjob.” I reminded her. “I don't think there has ever been a woman who gave a great blowjob the first time out. It's not easy to do a good job and it takes time and practice to learn.”

“Really?” she said, looking up at me hopefully. “You're not just saying that?”

“I've been with 17 women, I think, and only two were good at giving blowjobs. Four of them wouldn't even try and the rest did their best, but it just didn't feel that good. And a few of them were wonderful in the sack otherwise.” I hoped she wasn't scared about the number of women I'd been with.

“Only 17?” she asked. So much for being scared. “I thought it was a lot more. You're so good at it. And only two were good at blowjobs?” That news seems to have cheered her up a bit.

“Yes, only 17, but I was with one of them for 5 years and another for 3. Most of the rest lasted a month or so. Only 2 were one night

stands that I never saw again.” Why was I so concerned with defending my love life to a 10 year old girl? Oh yeah, because she was also the most amazing lover I ever had and I loved her more than life itself.

“Let me find you some movies with good cocksuckers. You can evaluate their techniques and figure out what works best for you. I promise you can practice on me whenever you want.” I said, getting a wry smile in return. “For now let’s take a shower and go get breakfast.”

## Chapter 14: Cocksucking 101

It was a weird day. After breakfast Sam didn't want to go swimming or go out anywhere. All she wanted was to learn how to suck a dick like a pro. Wow. Not a typical 10 year old to be sure. I kept thinking of her as 10 years old, but Cindy was 10, Sam is 11. I needed to do as I told her to do and forget the past. Sam is a lot more mature than any 10 year old I have ever heard of. Hell, she's more mature than a lot of adults I have met. I decided that I had to start thinking of her as being an 11 year old.

I fired up the laptop, logged onto my VPN so the hotel couldn't track me and went out in search of some porn. That's a typical day for a lot of guys, I thought. Most of them didn't have an 11 year old sex machine at their side however.

"Before we begin I want to explain a few things." I told her. "Do you remember how in Dirty Dancing all of the dancers were fantastic and didn't make any mistakes?" She nodded. "And how in all the Superhero movies we see all of the good guys are perfect shots and always get the bad guys?" She nodded again. "Well, porn is kind of like that too. It isn't like real life. The actors are all very good at fucking and they make it seem perfect. Even they do make mistakes they cut that out of the final video so they look perfect."

"I understand. You're saying that people who fuck in real life don't do it like they do in the movies?"

"Exactly." I said. "One of the big problems with porn is that a lot of guys, and some girls, use porn to learn how to fuck. They only see the perfectly played out scenes on the screen and when they start fucking for real it doesn't match up. They think there is something wrong."

"So you think porn should be more like real life?" she asked.

“Yeah, I guess so, but I’ve never thought of it quite like that. When home video became available a lot of amateur porn started to come out and that was more realistic. But even then people only share the best stuff, so even that is a little unrealistic. Anyway, I’m only going to get amateur for now, and only stuff that I think is realistic. Do you understand?”

“Yup. Let’s get going. I want to learn how to suck your dick.” she said with that grin I loved so much.

“That’s my girl.” I said, smiling. There were a lot of how-to videos for how to give a blowjob, even some gay ones, which I avoided. To each his own, but it doesn’t really appeal to me. She wanted me to grab some how-tos for eating pussy also, which I was curious about, but I didn’t say anything. Did she think I needed to learn some pointers?

“Wow!” she said watching one of the videos. “Look how big that guy’s dick is! I’m glad your dick isn’t big Daddy.”

I don’t think she knew how much talk like that can hurt a guy’s ego. My dick isn’t exactly small, but it sure isn’t big either. Giant cocks in porn lead to a lot of unrealistic expectations. I’ve seen the studies that show that my six inches are pretty much average. I think every guy would like to see what a few more inches would be like. I remembered she did say she was glad my dick was the size it was, so I took it as the compliment she probably meant it to me.

“All the better to fuck you with, my sweet Baby Girl” I said. “Someday.” I added when she looked hopefully at me. “I told you before, I don’t think your pussy is ready for full penetration. We’ll get there before you know it. I promise.” I was looking forward to it quite a lot myself. I planned to move onto anal next, but she needs to prepare for that too. I made a mental note to buy some training butt-plugs for her so we could start getting her sweet little asshole ready. Then I would get to really fuck her, well, buttfuck at least.

I downloaded a few of the videos she liked the best so she could study them at her leisure. She wanted to try right after lunch but I made her wait until the fool settled a little bit. We watched a movie to pass the time. She had never seen Back to the Future, so we watched the first one and were going to watch the sequels later that day, with a nice break for her to practice in between. Gives the term bingeing a whole new meaning I thought.

“That was great sweetie.” I told her after the first practice session. “You’ve definitely improved, and you swallowed the whole load without gagging this time.”

“I was prepared for it this time so I knew what to do. I didn’t go as deep this time either. That helped.” she explained. “I just wish I could go deeper.”

“Deepthroating is not easy, remember. That woman in the video said a lot of women just can’t do it, heir gag reflex is too strong. I don’t want you to push too hard. I wouldn’t enjoy it if you puked all over me.” I said.

“I know, but my gag reflex isn’t that strong and she said with training a lot of women do learn to overcome it. I really want you to be able to fuck my throat!” she declared suddenly. Holy Christ! 11 fucking years old! “It would be great to feel your cum shoot right down my throat and into my tummy.” The juxtaposition of throatfucking and tummy was kind of bizarre. It summed up my little Sam; innocent child and burgeoning sex goddess all wrapped up in one adorable package.

We watched the last movie and she practiced once again. She was getting a lot better and was very proud. “That time I got you to come even faster. And it was your second one today!” she boasted.

“Yes, and that can be good, sometimes. There are times we will definitely want to do it quickly. Most of the time I value the quality



more than the speed.” I advised her. “It is nice to know you can help me bust a nut in a hurry if I want.”

“Bust a nut? Is that the same as cuming?” she asked, a little confused.

“There are a bunch of euphemisms for everything having to do with sex. Some of them are kind of strange and some are quite funny. People invent new ones all the time. ‘Bust a nut’ is kind of new. You’ll pick them up. Well you’ve done enough for today, Baby Girl. It’s my turn to make you scream with pleasure!” That made her smile. “Come on. Let’s get some dinner and take a nice bath when we get back.” I wanted to make sure she was nice and clean for tonight. I wasn’t planing to eat dessert at the restaurant; I was planning to dine on her sweet little pink asshole tonight.

## Chapter 15: Anilingus

I started the bubble bath in the over-sized tub built for two. Then it was time to strip. She told me she wanted to try something special. She said always liked the way my dick bounced up and down after she pulls my boxers down. She said she was going to try and catch it in her mouth tonight. This I had to see, but everything wasn't quite ready yet. "I am afraid it's not very bouncy right now. Why don't you do a little strip tease and dance around for me. You always make it nice and hard Baby Girl."

"Okay. Sit back there on the bed and watch!" she said. She slowly peeled each article of clothing off in a surprisingly sexy way for an 11 year old girl. It didn't take long. "And there's a nice strong pole holding up that tent now. Come over and stand here." she directed. I was very interested in seeing just what she had in mind.

She sat on the ground underneath me so her mouth just a little below the height of my dick. "Ready?" she asked me. I nodded. "Here goes!" She leaned her head back a little and opened her mouth, sticking her tongue out, curled up a little like a catcher's mitt. Then she pulled my boxers down and my cock popped loose at the bottom and came up fast. She didn't try to catch it on the way up but after it moved past she moved her head in closer to catch it on the way down. She moved in too close however and on its way down my dick hit her nose and veered to the side, missing her tongue. I ended up under her chin.

"Wow! That was so close!" I said in as encouragingly as I could while trying desperately not to laugh. She looked up at me with a strange face and at first I thought she was mad. Then she broke into a grin and started laughing, which of course set my laughs loose as well. I picked her up and wrapped her up in my arms. "Sam, you are the most amazing person I've ever met. You are so adventurous and ready to try anything. I hope you never loose that and you keep me adventurous too. I love you so much sweetie."

"I love you so much too, Daddy. Thank you for not laughing. I know you wanted to." she finished giving me one of her smiles that just melt my whole insides.

"But not laughing at you Baby." I said as I carefully stepped into the bath with her still in my arms. As I sat down she let go and slid into her side of the bath. We played footsie a little but then our feet moved up each other's legs and we were carefully poking around each other's groins with our feet. I was being as careful as I could be but I made her jump once when I probed something wrong. After the second time she smashed my nuts too hard I decide to move on.

"Come over here Baby. I'm going rub you all over." She stood up and came over. I used a combination of a washcloth and my hands to gently and sensually rub her all over her perfect little body. I paid special attention to her little asshole this time, actually soaping up my pinkie and sticking it in a little bit. She moaned a little and shivered a little. "Is that okay? Am I hurting you?" I asked, concerned.

"No Daddy. It's okay. You've just never quite done that before."

"Well, let's shower off and hop in bed so I can show you why." I said as I pulled the plug and let the tub drain. After we rinsed off the soap and dried ourselves we climbed into bed and she lay down next to me with her hands resting on my chest and her head resting on her hands. "Tonight I want to take you one tiny step into our next stage, anal." I told her.

"Are you going to stick your dick up my butt?" she asked, a mixture of concern and excitement.

"No, not yet. That will come later, if you like it and want to try. Tonight I'm only going to use my tongue." I said, enjoying her new reaction. "Don't worry about it. That's why I cleaned your butt-hole so well, so it would be nice and clean for me."

"Okay. What do you want me to do?"

"For now, just lay back and enjoy. You can how limber you are a little later." I teased. I started as usual, kissing her mouth, around the head and neck and working down. I went faster this time. I had her flip over and did her back. When I reached her butt I massaged it well, then spread her cheeks wide and gave her sweet little butt-hole a quick lick with my tongue. That got the reaction I was hoping for. I continued down her legs and sucked on her nice clean toes for few minutes. I had her flip back over and I gave her a big kiss. "How was that?" I asked.

"It was a real nice start! I can't wait to find out what's next!" she answered excitedly.

"Well, now you get to show me just how flexible you can be." I said. I moved down to her feet and started kissing them as I lifted her legs up higher and higher. She didn't expect me to keep going, but I did. She was limber enough to basically fold herself in half so I brought them all the way up so her feet were over her head and she was peeking at me through her knees. She wrapped her arms around her legs and held them to her chest. I then kissed my way down her calves and thighs until I reached her sweet little slit, sandwiched tight between her legs. I licked up and down her slit, pushing my tongue in as far as I could. She started to pull her legs apart but I kept them together. "Not yet." I whispered. "A sweet treat is even tastier if you have to work for it!"

She understood and keep her legs together. She put her head back and started to moan as I worked my tongue in deeper and deeper. I used my fingers to pry her labia apart a little more and gave my mouth a workout. Then I moved my hands down and spread her ass cheeks. Her little asshole was so pretty, perfect to my mind, though I am probably just a little biased. I started with slow, gentle licking in all directions. She really seemed to like it when I swirled around. "Oh Daddy! You're licking my butt! It's kind of gross, but it feels soooooo good." she said.

"Do you want me to stop?" I asked, lifting my head up and looking at her, what little I could see.

"Don't you dare stop!" She said. "Seafood is kind of gross too, but I love it... and this is a whole lot better!"

"Well maybe you would like me to delve a little deeper than, eh?" I asked as now I finally started to pull her legs apart. She started to move them down, but I kept them up and pulled her knees apart. I gently pushed her right leg behind her arm and she got the idea, putting the other leg behind too. She was on her back with her legs crossed behind her head and her ass high in the air. It was one of the most beautiful sights I have ever seen. So Fucking Hot! I put my hands under her butt and brought my face down like I was going to drink from a giant bowl. Her pussy was open wide and I was able to push my tongue in as far as it could go without much effort. I continued to eat her pussy like a man dying of hunger.

After her second orgasm I moved down and started licking her little asshole like there was a prize inside. I used a free hand to start rubbing her pussy as well. "Your little ruby starfish is still kind of tight, Baby Girl. Try to loosen it up a little." She looked at me funny. "Your butt-hole." I laughed. "Euphemisms, remember? I think you're kind of tense still and I want you to just relax. Don't worry about it."

"Okay. If you're sure it's okay." she said. I nodded. I saw her relax a little and I could see the sphincter un-clench. Then it suddenly opened up and the cutest little fart you ever heard came out. I looked up at her to see a face that was a combination of surprised and mortified. I started laughing. "Why are you laughing at me? I just farted on you... in your Face!" she said. I could see she was about to cry so I crawled up, put my face in front of hers and blew gently on her face.

"There you go. I'm happy to share." I said before laughing some more. Her face went through several emotions for a few seconds,

settling on indignant. I kissed her lightly and said. "That barely even registers on the fart scale. That was more of a toot than a fart, really. If you want to experience what real farts are like it just wait until St. Patrick's Day. I love corned-beef and cabbage." That got her laughing again. "Don't worry about it Baby Girl. We'll get to experience much more embarrassing stuff together, I promise. That's part of deal when you share everything with your lover. Now let me get back to work. I think you've got a least two more orgasms in you."

"Okay Daddy." she said as she settled back down and started relaxing again. The laughing did loosen her up some and when I spread her open I was able to open her butt-hole up just enough to push the tip of my tongue in. She giggled at that and then started moaning as I wiggled it around as best I could. I moved a hand up to start rubbing her pussy again and soon she started to spasm again with another orgasm.

After she had recovered and rested a little I used a lot of spit to lube up my index finger and her anus. I slowly pushed it in, working in and out until I was at the second knuckle. I ate her delicious pussy while my other hand started playing with her nipples. In another few minutes she had her final orgasm. I brought her legs back down and settled down beside her, embracing. "So how was that?" I asked.

"That was Great!" she said. "Except when I farted on you." she said after remembering.

"That really isn't a big deal at all Sam. Trust me. I know you liked it when I licked your asshole, but what did you think when I stuck my finger up there." I asked, hoping the experience was positive.

"Oh! That was neat. It felt good, but..."

"But what?" I prompted.

"Won't it hurt if you put something bigger in there, like your penis? I don't want it to hurt!" she said finally. She seemed worried.

"Well, it doesn't have to hurt, and if we do it right it won't." I said, trying to banish her fears.

"Really? I did like it and to tell you the truth, sometimes I do fantasize about you putting your penis up there. I really want you to fuck me, even if it is only up the butt." She confessed.

"Well that's good to hear because sometimes I fantasize about putting my penis in that beautiful little ass of yours. If we go really slow and train your sphincter we can make sure it won't hurt you." I proceeded to explain how we could use butt-plugs to slowly increase her size until my penis would fit in with almost no pain at all.

"Cool! So then you could be fucking me by... Summer?" she asked. I nodded. "Okay, let's do it, Daddy. I want you to fuck me so bad!" I could sure get behind a goal like that!

## Chapter 16: Time to Go Home

By the end of the next day I could see she was getting bored. “Have you had enough Disney for now?” I asked and she nodded, confirming it. “Do you want to explore more of Florida?” I asked. “Christmas is in two weeks. Let’s rent a car and explore the Gulf coast so we reach Key West for Christmas. Does that sound good?”

“I’d like that. I want to see manatees and alligators!” she exclaimed. So I rented a car and we headed for the coast. Sam wanted a convertible so we got a Miata, since we didn’t have a lot of luggage. We didn’t have any plan, just went wherever we thought looked neat. Once we couldn’t find a hotel room and we just bought a sleeping bag at Walmart and slept under the stars on a deserted stretch of beach. I you ever get the chance to get a blowjob from an 11 year old girl under a starry night sky with the sound of waves all around, DO IT. Most glorious blowjob ever.

I found a sex shop and got her some training plugs and she was excited to get going. Such determination. I even bought her a foxtail and she loved it and she wants matching ears. We rented a boat for a day and she finally got to see some manatees in the wild. When we got to the Everglades we took an air-boat tour and she got to see lots and lots of alligators. I took lots of pictures and talked to a lot of people as well. I could probably write one whole book from just that trip, but there is a lot more of Florida to see.

We got down to the Keys two days before Christmas. I booked a room for Key West before we left Disney because I knew it would be next to impossible to find one when we arrived. Even then I had to spend a ton of money on a top end room since that was all that was available. Although I can afford it I don’t spend a lot of money if I can help it. I fly business class and get rooms at about that level. Sam doesn’t know how much money I have and I don’t want her to. I want her to grow up as normal as possible, considering.



I set the limit at \$100 for presents and we bought them at some local shops; mostly tourist stuff. I've never been big on presents but Sam really wanted to get some since she didn't get many before. I got her a nice sun hat, a necklace and a Key West case for her phone. She got me a nice case for my sunglasses, a "World's Greatest Dad" tee-shirt and a nice Polo Shirt she thought would look good on me. The best gift by far were the 10 hand-drawn coupons for "A Sloppy Blowjob" that she said I could redeem whenever I wanted to. I knew I didn't need a coupon to get her to give me a blowjob, but I treasured them anyway. Christmas on Key West is kind of fun, but the thrill didn't last long for Sam. Three days later she was ready to go.

"I want to go home, Daddy." she told me that night over dinner. "It has been lots of fun but I'm just ready to go back."

"What home?" I asked. "The RV is the only home we have right now."

"Well, then back there, I guess. Layla's there so that makes it home, right?" She sounded resigned to how things were. I had been thinking about making a real home for us and now seemed like a good time.

"How would you like to have a real home? A house with your own room and everything?" I asked.

"Really! That would be awesome! I don't think I'd use the bed in my room much though." she said as she winked at me.

"Well, that's okay with me, but if anyone else comes over we need to make it look like you do sleep in your own room most of the time." I pointed out. She nodded. "Okay, let's head back to Pete's and figure out what to do from there, okay?"

"Sure. I'd like to see Beth again too. I've got some things I want to show her." she said in a way that made me sure some of those things would involved nudity. I didn't mind. Healthy thing for her to

experiment. I found out we could take a cruise ship to Galveston from Key West and Sam liked the idea. I had never been on a cruise and although it was kind of neat, I just didn't think it was something I wanted to do. Sam felt about the same.

In Galveston I rented a car and drove the 3 hours back to Austin. I cashed in one of my coupons for a sloppy wet bj on the trip and I decided that I could get used to this. I had called Pete to let him know and he said the kids had a surprise for us. When we got there I found out that they had taught Layla a bunch of tricks. She could dance around on two legs, roll over, even pretend to be injured and walk around on three legs. It was kind of cool. I was glad they had all gotten along so well. Sam and Beth ran off to Beth's room and Sam wanted to stay over again. It was a nice day out so Pete and I relaxed and talked on the back patio.

"The trip was a lot of fun," I said, "but I'm starting to see that I can't just live like I did before I adopted Sam. We can't just be on the road all of the time. I think I need to settle down and get a permanent place to stay, a kind of home base... well, a home, actually."

"Why not here in Austin?" Pete suggested. "Beth loves Sam. The whole time you were away she wanted to know when Sam was coming back."

"Really? Just like that? It would be a big change for you guys." I pointed out.

"Yeah, I guess. But who cares. I haven't had a real good friend nearby since college. I do some stuff with some of the guys at work and I know a few guys at the gym, but none of them are real close friends I can talk to about anything and trust to have my back. You know what I mean?" I nodded. "I think about the old days a lot and how much fun we had. Why do you think I've been after you to visit for so long. I was stoked as hell when you called and said you were going to come visit."

“I miss those days too.” I confessed. “Back before I got the dotcom fever and dropped everything really that mattered to me. I’m sorry about leaving like that. I didn’t think about anybody else at the time. I was a bit of an asshole. I have wanted to say that before but I never had the guts to come out and face it before. I guess that’s why I stayed away, even after I left the tech world.”

“Dude! Don’t worry about it. We’ve all been young assholes who thought we knew everything before.” Pete said. I felt relieved and a weight I didn’t know I was carrying was lifted off of me. “So settling down here makes a lot of sense, right. Where else would you go?”

“Mom and Dad are gone and my brother moved up to Canada. We never really got along and we don’t talk much. I haven’t even told him about Sam.” I realized. “This is fairly centralized in the country so I can take research trips to work on my book. Sam will go back to school. I want her to be with people her own age and she won’t get that homeschooling with me. We can still go out on weekends and holidays. And we’ll have the summer too. It’ll be nice to get out of the Texas heat in summer!” I pointed out.

Pete laughed. “You got that right. Maybe I should come with you.” He joked.

I didn’t think the idea was so silly. “That’s a good idea. Not the whole summer, of course, but we could do some traveling together. The girls would just love it.”

“They sure would. Hey, now that I think about it, the house that is right behind us is for sale. It’s one street over but we share a fence, so that’s almost as good as next door. Want to go take a look?” he suggested.

“Sure, but don’t mention anything to anyone else. I don’t want Sam to find out and get her hopes up in case it doesn’t work out.” I grabbed Layla to take with, telling everyone we were taking her for a

walk. The house was great. A simple three bedroom with attached garage and a big yard that matched Pete's. It was directly behind him and we both figured we could put a gate in the fence so we could go back and forth, especially Layla since I didn't think I'd be able to keep her away from Tyler. I called the Realtor and checked it out. I made an offer on the spot. Pete looked at me like I was nuts.

"Can you afford to just buy a house like that?" he asked. "You said you haven't even published one of your books yet."

"Pete, don't freak out, alright. I could just buy this whole neighborhood if I wanted. I made a lot of money and it used to rule my life." I tried to explain. "After my accident the money just didn't really matter anymore. I don't want it to rule my life anymore so I don't use it if I don't have to. I don't have a bunch of investments and teams of accountants. It just sits in a low interest fund I don't have to worry about." Pete looked at me like I was nuts again and started to say something but I cut him off. "Don't. I know most people would think it is a waste and it could be earning a lot more, but I don't care, at least I don't right now. That may start to change since I have Sam now and I need to think of her future too. For now, just leave it alone. I don't want to talk about it anymore, okay?" He nodded reluctantly. "And don't tell Jesse either. I don't want her to start looking at me funny too."

## Chapter 17: Home Sweet Home

I decided to keep the house secret and surprise Sam when it was all set up. Jesse jumped at the idea of decorating the place and I gave her carte blanche. I decided I needed to get Sam away so everything could be done without anyone noticing. Beth and Tyler were gone during the day so Jesse had time to work on it. She said she could get it all done in less than two weeks. I needed an excuse to pull Sam away so soon, so I read the news and found just what I needed. Because of the warmer winters some ski resorts were having trouble. I found one that was having a really bad year and it was just the excuse I needed. I sprang the news on Sam that night. We had a week or so until the sale of the house could be completed so even though she didn't want to go so soon a week was enough of a break between trips.

She slept in Beth's room that night but when Beth left early in the morning for school she climbed into bed with me. We had some quiet morning fun and showered together when Jesse went out. Over breakfast she has some very interesting news for me. "Guess what? Beth taught Layla a trick too." She was grinning.

"I give up." I said. "What trick?"

"Lick it." she said and laughed at my puzzled look. "She taught Layla how to lick her pussy!" she said excitedly. "And her asshole too. She showed me last night. Then I told her I could do a better job and started to eat her out before she could say anything. She loved it! Then she told Layla to lick me while I did her. It was awesome. I made believe it was you eating me out. Layla's okay, but not nearly as good as you."

I was hard as a rock. "Come on." I said as I got up and climbed up the stairs to the guest room. "Layla!" I called on the way. I looked back to see Sam and she had a huge smile. We got up in the room and I closed and locked the door. We were both naked in ten seconds and

on the bed. “Okay, lay back and spread you legs. I want to see this. Layla! Here girl. Lick it!” On command Layla crawled up to Sam’s tasty snatch and started licking away. Sam was immediately moaning. I kneeled next to her head and brought my cock up to her face. She grabbed hold of it and started sucking like a woman possessed. I moved my hand down and started rubbing her clit while Layla continued to lick away.

“Oh God, Daddy. This is so hot!” she said before continuing her work. I started playing with her nipples with my other hand. Layla was trying to lick her asshole but couldn’t quite get her tongue all the way in. I got an idea and I laid on my back and pulled her on top of me into a 69 position. She went back to work on my cock as I started to eat her pussy along with Layla. Then I reached my hands up and spread her cheeks wide. That was what Layla wanted and she started to lick Sam’s ass like there was a treat inside. “Yes! Yes! Yes! Oh Daddy don’t stop. Layla I love you!” she cried, a little too loudly. She came with a massive orgasm just as I let loose and filled her mouth.

“Wow Baby Girl, that was wonderful. You were great too, Layla.” I said as I reached up with my hand and rubbed her ears. She started to lick my face all over and I realized she was licking all of Sam’s sweet pussy juice off. When she was finished I spread Sam’s pussy wide open and Layla started to clean it up too. Sam giggled and then closed her legs, her pussy was still too sensitive. “So this is what you and Beth did last night?” I asked as I snuggle up next to her.

“Yes, but it wasn’t this good. It feels so much better when you do it. Oh and when you let Layla eat my ass. Heaven!” She was so happy.

“Okay, let’s take another shower. We smell like sex!” We hopped in the shower again but kept it quiet because we didn’t know when Jesse was getting home. We left one at a time, which was good because Jesse was home. She didn’t notice our co-ed shower and when we came downstairs she asked what we were going to do for the

day. I said we were going to take some more pictures and do some more research and she suggested places to go.

The rest of the week went by quickly. Sam and Beth spent a lot of time in Beth's room. I assume Sam was giving Beth some more pointers. I set up a bank account for Jesse to use for the expenses on the house. I had a power of attorney written up so she could do whatever she needed for the house without me. We flew up to Wyoming the day after the signing and spent two weeks taking pictures and exploring the area. I took Sam skiing and she liked it. Neither of us really liked the cold, but we didn't mind it too much either, at least when we knew we'd be back to Texas soon. Jesse let me know when everything was going to be done and I booked a return flight.

We got back kind of late so we just went right to sleep. The next morning was Sunday and everyone slept in. I left early and went over to the new house. Jesse had done an awesome job and I knew Sam was going to love it. The plan was for me to wait at the new house and for Pete and Jesse to bring everyone over. They told the kids that an old friend of Pete's had just bought a house and that they promised to bring everyone over to see it. Sam asked where I was and Pete said I had to go out for something but that I had already seen the house. Since it was so close Pete and Jesse said they could all walk and bring Layla.

I hid in the house while they came up to the door. All of the kids looked bored. Pete and Jesse were smiling, looking forward to surprising the kids. Pete knocked on the door and stepped back so the kids were up front. I opened the door and got to see the surprised look on Sam's face. "Welcome home, Baby Girl." I said and watched her face turn from surprise to sheer joy. She actually shrieked and jumped up and down. Then she ran up to me and jumped up into my arms and kissed me before hugging me harder than ever before. "What do you think? Do you like our new house?"

“Daddy! This is the most wonderful, awesome, super special thing ever! Well except when you rescued me... by adopting me.” she recovered after realizing what she had said. Neither Pete nor Jesse seemed to notice anything strange. “When did you get it? Why didn’t you tell me? I thought we were going to pick a place together.”

“Well, I bought it three weeks ago. I didn’t tell you because I wanted to see your wonderful reaction. And lastly, I thought you’d agree this is the perfect house. If you don’t like it, we can find another one. I did promise you after all.” I soothed.

“No! I love it. We are so close to Beth, only like a block and a half. We can see each other all of the time!” She really was excited. Now to show her the best part.

“It’s better than that even. Come here.” I walked her to the back patio door, opened it and walked out. Everyone else followed. I looked her in the eyes and said “Ready for the best part?” I asked. She nodded, excited. I turned her head and pointed at the other house. “You won’t even have to leave our yards.” The gate in the fence was open and she could see it was a quick walk through the yard to Beth’s house.

“Oh my God! Really. Beth! We’re neighbors! I can see your bedroom window!” Beth started screaming and Sam started too as they both jumped up and down. Pete and Jesse were laughing.

“Guess what, Tyler?” I said as I turned to face him. “Layla can run through the yard from our house to your house so you can see her whenever you want.

“Oh boy! Layla, you can come over whenever you want!” Now he was excited too.

Sam and Beth ran up to Sam’s room and they realized they could see each other’s bedrooms across the yards. Jesse had put a Queen-sized bed in Sam’s room as I asked her to. I said it was for slumber



parties the girls might have someday. I knew it was also so Sam and Beth had plenty of space on the bed, with enough to spare for Layla. I had a King-sized bed in my room, for much the same reason. The master bath had a whirlpool tub and a big walk-in shower so there was plenty of room for both of us. I had the spare room made up as a home theater with a huge screen. There were two recliners and a couch that could pull out into a bed in case we did have a guest.

I went over and thanked them both for everything. “Thank you both so much. Especially you, Jesse. You did an awesome job with the house. Every detail is perfect. I want a regular movie night so you guys can come watch something every week.”

“Friday after dinner?” Pete suggested. We all agreed. “We each pick movies in rotation. We’ll kick it off Friday with Star Wars.”

“Yes!” I said. “Just like old times, eh? I need to invest in a nice popcorn machine.”

## Chapter 18: Best Valentine's Day Ever

I enrolled Sam at the same school Beth and Tyler went to. It was a private school with a very progressive way of teaching. It was much better suited to Sam than her old public school had been. She came in as a transfer student. They evaluated her current level and she got put in the same grade as Beth, to everyone's relief. Jesse drove Sam to school and back with Beth and Tyler. The girls would have slept together every night if they could but we limited it to Friday and Saturday night. I admit I was a little bit selfish. I wanted Sam to sleep with me most of the time.

Sam had a full physical before they let her attend classes. I was relieved that she was healthy, considering her previous living conditions. Her anal training was coming along nicely and she was using larger and larger plugs. She loved walking around with the tail and ears, and nothing else. We had to be very careful with that though. One day she asked for a sewing machine and I got her one. She had done a lot of sewing growing up and she knew how to use one. About a week later she walked up to me wearing her fox ears and a pair of pants with a tail attached, or so I thought. "What do you think, Daddy?" she asked, twirling around.

"I like it. Now I see why you wanted the sewing machine. You sewed a tail onto your pants. That's cute." I told her. It really was cute.

"Not exactly, Daddy. Go ahead and pull on my tail, but not too hard." she said with a grin. She turned her butt toward me and shook it. I grabbed the tail and started to pull, slowly. The tail tightened up and she let out a little gasp. I noticed the tail wasn't pulling on the pants and I went in for a closer look. The tail wasn't attached to the pants. The tail went through a hole she had sewn in the pants and attached inside. It was attached to her butt-plug! "Do you like it, Daddy?" she asked again.

“I was wrong Baby Girl. That’s not cute. It’s Fucking Hot!” I gave her tail a few more gentle tugs and I could see the reaction. “You are so amazing.”

“I’m going over to see Beth.” she said as she turned and sauntered out the door, swishing her tail back and forth. Time to order some more tails and ears, I thought to myself as I went back to the computer in my office. I wasn’t surprised to see Beth with a tail and ears a few days later. I had a feeling the smaller butt-plugs Sam had outgrown were missing too.

I always wanted Layla to have some puppies and now that we had a permanent home she could. She would be coming into heat very soon so I took her to the vet for a checkup. She was in great shape and puppies wouldn’t be an issue. The vet gave me information on a local breeder. I picked out a stud and everything was ready for when she went into heat next month.

We had been in the house for two weeks when Valentine’s day came. Sam was my only valentine, of course. I made her a cute regular card from Daddy and a private one from her lover to keep secret. We went out to a nice family restaurant and had a nice Daddy-Daughter Valentine where we would exchanged our cards. She had worn her ears and tail so I knew she had something planned. Everyone around us thought it was so cute. After we ordered Sam jumped up and came over to me. “Time to exchange cards, Daddy.” she said, giving me a handmade one. I could even hear a few people nearby go Awwww. Inside it said “You are my hero. You rescued me and set me free. I will love you always... and all ways (wink, wink). P.S. Hold my tail tight and don’t let go.” I closed the card, gave her a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. Then I grabbed her tail as she directed. “I got your tail!” I said and everyone laughed.

She bent over a little and pulled away from my hand until the tail was tight. “Daddy!” she said in a playful voice. “Let me go or I won’t tell you my secret!” People looked and laughed. It really did look cute and innocent. If they only knew that Sam was having me

slowly pull the plug out of her butt as she said “Ouch!” in a cute little way like she was pretending it hurt. Eventually it popped out and she gave a little shudder. “Okay, enough fun Daddy!” she playfully scolded me. “Let go of my tail so I can tell you my secret.” I did as instructed and she reached back and appeared to be rubbing where her fake tail was attached. I knew she was actually adjusting the plug back at the entrance to her butt-hole. She was performing a little skit and all of the people around smiled and enjoyed it, wondering what was next.

The next thing she did just floored me. She turned back to face me, straddled my leg and appeared to sit on it, but very lightly. “Okay Daddy, here’s my secret.” she said loud enough for everyone to hear. Then she leaned forward, put her hands on my shoulders and put her mouth right next to my ear. “This is your cock at my asshole.” she said in her sexiest voice as she moved her butt back and forth a little. I felt the bottom of the butt-plug on my thigh and I knew the other end was now rubbing all around her glorious little sphincter. “You try to push it in but my ass is so tight you can’t get it to go in further.” Now she sat down harder and the plug was pressing on my leg, and into her ass. “I relax my anus so you can stick your hard cock into my ass.” She did relax and I felt the plug start to slide in. “Desperate to fuck me you grab my hips and thrust forward, plunging you cock deep inside of me.” She sat down fully and I felt the plug pop back in. She gave out a little gasp, but no one noticed. “Can you eat with your dick so hard Daddy?” she teased before getting back up. “Did you like my secret, Daddy.” she said louder in her cute voice as she leaned forward and kissed my forehead. Even more Awwwws from the “Audience”.

“Uhhh...ummm...ahhh. Yes, Baby Girl.” I said finally. “I liked it a lot and I will never forget it.” I kissed her on the cheek. She got up and went back to her seat. There were smiles all around. Everyone loved it. If they only knew what she actually said and did... well, they’d probably get horny as hell, like I was. It was harder to eat (pun intended) with her whispers still echoing in my ear.

We finished our 'date' and left. We weren't in the car for ten seconds before her pants where at her knees and she was fingering herself like mad. The truck was pretty high so no one could see in, but I had to get her out of here before we got busted. "Just hold on until we get home Baby Girl. You earned yourself a treat tonight." She looked at me and pulled her hand up and started sucking her fingers. I leaned over and got a taste myself. The drive home seemed to be taking forever but I drove the speed limit. I sure didn't want to get pulled over right now.

I parked in the garage and we left a trail of clothes as we striped naked on the way up to the bedroom. When we got there I picked her up, flipped her over and started munching her sopping wet pussy, still standing. She wrapped her legs around my head, grabbed my cock and engulfed it with her mouth. Her tail was still attached so I let her slide down a little and slowly pulled it out. It popped out and left an opening that was just begging for a tongue to slide into, and mine did. "Oh God, Daddy. Fuck yes! Ahhhhhh!" she screamed as her first (I think) orgasm hit her.

Her legs started to slip so I laid my back on the bed and put both of my hands to work, spreading her ass and pussy wide. It was an all you can eat buffet and I was starving. My tongue was getting tired and after her second orgasm I started just using my lips to suck and kiss everything. Now that she wasn't moaning and screaming every few seconds she was able to really get to work on my blowjob. In a few minutes I shot my load deep into her throat and she swallowed it down in one big gulp.

"Happy Valentine's day, Daddy." she said to me as we enjoyed our post-fuck cuddle a few minutes later.

"Happy Valentine's day, Baby Girl." I replied. "Hey!" I said, remembering. "I almost forgot your present. I reached into my side table and pulled out a small package tied with a bow. She grabbed it and ripped the wrapping off as fast as she could. I don't think she had gotten a lot of gifts when she was younger. She opened the box and

pulled out a slender gold vibrator that was about as wide as my thumb. “I think you should be able to take this now. I’ve got some lube over here if you need it. Do you want to try it out?”

“Oh yes, Daddy. I love you so much!” she said as she wrapped her arms around me and started kissing me. I spent the next half hour watching this beautiful little angel playing with her new toy, using it in every way she could think of. I sucked on her nipples and jacked off while she was using it in her ass. I let her know when I was about to cum and she bent down to suck it all up, as she always does.

Good thing the next day was a Sunday. We slept in to recover our strength. When we finally got up she headed right over to see Beth. She said she wanted to show her the present I got her and winked before heading out the door. I laughed and made a mental note to buy more batteries.

“Let’s get a pool, Daddy.” she said a couple of days later. “It would be great to go swimming without going anywhere. I want to go skinny dipping with you too!”

“That’s a great idea, Baby Girl.” I said. “We’ll have to put up a big privacy fence so the neighbors can’t see inside.” I called around and found a place that could install a nice in-ground pool, complete with enclosure. They were able to build it so that it could be enclosed in the cold months and shaded in the hot months. They also put in a separate hot tub that could seat 8 with solar heaters. Solar PV provided all of the electric the pool area needed, it was entirely self-sufficient. Some outdoor hot showers to wash off were the final touch. The pool would be located away from the house, as close as possible to the property line with Pete, so we could all use it. The builders got all of the permits and said it could be done by April.

Sam had another great idea the next week. “I want you to put a camera in my room above my bed so you can watch me and Beth when we are having fun.” she suggested.

“Another great idea Sam.” I agreed. “Maybe two so I can get multiple angles. One fixed and one with a zoom and movement.” She nodded emphatically. I bought the stuff and installed it myself, my tech experience coming in handy. I didn’t want anyone else to know about it. I hid the fixed camera in a wall sconce above her headboard and the other one in an overhead light. I put in infra-red cameras so we could use them at night too. I went ahead and installed fixed cameras in all the rooms to use as a security system. I put the same two-camera setup in my bedroom also, figuring they would probably get some use someday as well. All the cameras had microphones as well.

Layla went into heat while I was installing the cameras and I made arrangements to bring her to the stud when she was most likely to conceive. “Hey Baby Girl,” I said to Sam later. “Want to go with me to see Layla get laid?” I knew she wouldn't want to miss it.

“Hell yes!” she confirmed. “At least someone in the house can get properly fucked!” she joked.

“Just beware it isn’t going to be like when humans do it. It actually looks kind of brutal sometimes. Just be prepared.” On the ride home afterward I asked her what she thought.

“It was kind of rough, but I thought it was hot as well.” She paused for a couple of seconds. “Daddy, is it wrong that I kind of feel like I wanted to be Layla and get fucked by a big dog like that.” she asked, stunning me yet again.

“Some people would think it was very wrong, but a lot of women have done just that. I actually don’t see it as wrong, as long as the woman and dog both want to do it and are treated well.” I confessed. She just nodded her head a little and got lost in thought. Was anything going to be taboo to this girl?

## Chapter 19: A Tween Conspiracy

Beth came over that Friday for their weekend sleepover. “Be sure to watch and listen to us tonight, Daddy.” she told me. “I want to know you are watching and jacking off when we’re doing it. Listen very closely. You might hear something you like.” she said cryptically. So that night I got to try out the cameras for the first time. They started off talking about school and everyday stuff. I kept listening closely though, trusting Sam. “So you still haven’t told me what you think about what I told you yesterday.” I heard Sam say.

“I think it is a little weird, but kind of exciting too. You really do the stuff we do with your Dad as well?” Beth asked. So Sam had finally told Beth about us. I was kind of proud of her for keeping it secret for this long, to be honest.

“Yeah, we really do and it is awesome! I just wish he would actually fuck me.” she confessed. “He’s going to fuck me in the ass soon, when my ass is ready. He says my pussy isn’t ready for it yet and we have to wait until I start to develop and get hair and my titties get bigger.”

“I’m so jealous! I wish I could get a guy to fuck me too.” Beth said.

“Any guy, or your dad?” Sam asked. I was starting to get hard.

“Well, not just ANY guy. Jacob Stevens, maybe.” The both giggled. He must be a boy in their class. “But yeah, I want my daddy to fuck me like your daddy fucks you. But it is kind of gross since he’s my dad. What if I got pregnant had had some kids with 7 toes. You’re adopted so you don’t have to worry about that.” Did Pete know his little girl had the hots for him? I doubted it.



“That’s true, but Daddy had an operation so he can’t make babies anymore, so we don’t even have to worry about that.” Sam informed her.

“Wow! You are so lucky. You could fuck your daddy as much as you want and not have to worry about getting pregnant.”

“I doubt I would anyway. I don’t think I’ll ever let him cum inside of me. I love to swallow his cum so much, I don’t want to waste it!” Sam declared. Beth looked a little grossed out. “Don’t knock it until you try it. I think it tastes great and I love knowing that part of him is always part of me, since you are what you eat, right?” she said, smiling.

Beth thought about that for a few seconds. “I hadn’t ever thought of it like that. It would be nice to know my daddy was part of me. That would make our relationship even more special.” she said finally, understanding what Sam meant. “I don’t know if I’ll ever get to find out though. I don’t think there is any way I could get daddy to do that.” she said, depressed.

“I have an idea!” Sam exclaimed. “Why don’t we swap? You fuck my Daddy and I can fuck your daddy!” Sam proposed. She had all of my attention now. I actually sat up a little automatically, waiting to hear Beth’s response with anticipation.

Beth thought for a second. “I think I would be okay with that.” she said. I almost came just thinking about it. “I kind of wanted my first time to be with daddy, a real special event. But if you do it with daddy and I do it with Uncle J it would still be special, and you would be part of it too!” She exclaimed, really excited. “Oh Sam. Let’s do it! Let’s fuck each other’s dads!”

They embraced in a passionate kiss and soon began making out seriously. They started kissing and licking each other all over. I was so turned on I came right away. They both had butt-plugs in and pulled each other’s out before eating each other’s ass. Sam exclaimed

“Oh Uncle Pete!” and other phrases. I even heard her say “Oh Daddy, don’t stop.” too. Maybe she was imagining a three-way. I was so turned on I came again when I heard Beth yell “Yes Uncle J! Eat my ass!”

Their little conspiracy started to take shape as they made plans cuddling after. “I don’t think it will take much to get my Daddy on board. I’ve seen him look at you sometimes and I know he thinks you’re sexy.” Sam told Beth.

“Really! Oh, I can’t wait!” Beth replied. It was all I could do to keep myself from running in there and fucking her right then. “But how are you going to get my daddy to do it with you?” she asked.

“Oh, I have some ideas.” she said with a huge grin. “It’s going to be a lot of fun! I’ve never seduced anyone before. You were ready to go, you just needed someone to start with. I’m glad it was me.”

“Me too, Sam. I love you so much!” she said and they both hugged each other and started crying. “Goodnight Sam. Goodnight lover.” Beth said when they were done.

“Goodnight lover.” Sam responded as they laid back and went to sleep.

I laid there with my head spinning. My little girl was setting me up to fuck her best friend. She was obviously not jealous, in fact she loved the idea of sharing me. I felt a small pang of jealousy, I hate to admit. I knew Sam wasn’t going to be mine forever and someday I would be sharing her with other special people in her life. I already did share her with Beth, but that was a little different. Pete was a grown man. He was also my best friend and I was going to be fucking his daughter. I decided it would be okay. I trusted Sam. I turned over and went to sleep, wishing I had Sam with me.

I woke up a few hours later to find my wish fulfilled as Sam climbed in next to me and cuddled up. “Well Daddy. What do you think? Are you okay with it?” she asked, hoping I said okay.

“I jacked off twice watching you two. What do you think?” I replied.

“I think this is going to be great. And I’m mad that I missed your second load. I told you to jack off but I didn’t want you to waste more.” she joked.

“You’re going to have to share with Beth soon, you know.” I pointed out.

“Yeah, I know.” she said, a little sad. “But soon I’ll get to swallow uncle Pete’s too. I bet he’s got a lot of surplus just waiting for a hot little girl like me to milk it! Okay, I’m going back to Beth now. Just think, you’ll have both of us in here with you very soon!” she said as she gave me a big kiss and slid out of bed. I smiled at that and turned over to go back to sleep, thinking of how nice that will be as I drifted off.

## Chapter 20: SweetB & K-Bear

The following Friday was movie night. Only Pete showed up though. “Where’s Jesse?” I asked. “She’s gonna miss Raiders of the Lost Ark.”

“Yeah. Sorry about that. Her dad is in town and they are uhh... spending some time together... Ah... catching up. Yeah, they’re catching up.” he said in a kind of strange, evasive way.

“Well can’t he come over and watch too? There’s plenty of room and I’d like to see him again.” I suggested.

“No, not tonight. He usually visits more often but it has been away for a while and the wanted to uh... catch up right away. Let’s start the movie!” he said, trying to sound excited so he wouldn’t have to talk about it anymore.”

“Okay.” I said, letting it go. “You grab the popcorn and I’ll get the girls. This is a classic. They should see it. How about Tyler?”

“Nah, I think he’s still a little young for this. Besides, he doesn’t like snakes. He’ll hang out with Layla watching some of his videos in his room. He’ll be fine.”

We all got back in the theater and the movie was loaded up and ready to go. Pete and I each had a recliner. The girls usually sat together on the couch but tonight Sam walked over to Pete and said “Can I sit on your lap tonight, Uncle Pete? I’m mad at Daddy because he didn’t let me buy the outfit I wanted.” She gave me a mean look but winked at me out of the eye Pete couldn’t see. I don’t remember anything about an outfit. She had made it all up.

“Only if I can sit in Uncle J’s lap!” Beth said. “It’s only fair, right?” These two had worked his all out.

Pete looked at me and I just shrugged, like it was okay with me. “I guess so sweetie. Hop up here. I’ll keep you safe from that mean daddy!” he said playfully. Sam climbed up on Pete and sat beside him. Nice and innocent. Beth did the same with me and I started the movie.

Sam knew this movie since we had watched it before. She knew where the scary parts were and she must have told Beth. They both used the scary parts to climb up in our laps. Then, during exciting parts they wiggle around like they were really enjoying the movie. Sam was the first to do it all and then Beth did, following her lead. I looked at Pete out of the corner of my eye a couple of times and he seemed a little uncomfortable, but also enjoying Sam’s butt rubbing him. He glanced over my way a couple of times, like he wanted be be sure I wasn’t watching. I could see him shift in the seat a couple of times and I know Sam’s bouncing had gotten him hard. Beth had gotten me hard too, but I didn’t move or try to hide it. I just ignored it outwardly while enjoying it immensely. My apparent indifference seemed to make Beth work harder, like she wanted a reaction. Eventually I put my hand under her ass where Pete couldn’t see it and squeezed slowly. She seemed to really like that.

Before I knew it the movie was over. “Well, how was that girls?” I asked, like nothing had happened. “Wasn’t that an awesome movie. A real classic.”

“It was great!” Beth and Sam said at the same time. Everyone laughed. “I’m sorry if I jumped around too much when I got scared Uncle Pete.” Sam said to him. “I didn’t hurt you, did I?” She was such a tease.

“Uh, no. Ha ha. Of course not.” he said uncomfortably. “I’m glad I could be here for you. You’ll always have your Uncle Pete to spoil you. It’s getting late JR. I’m going to head home. Jesse and her dad should be done... uh... catching up by now. You girls have fun!” he said before heading out, trying to hide his erection.

Sam gave me a knowing grin. “Okay Beth. Let’s head up to bed. See you tomorrow Daddy!” she said as they bounded upstairs. I put the disc away, turned everything off and headed up to my room. Sam was right. It was going to be fun watching her start to wrap Pete around her sexy little finger.

The next morning I was woken up by someone gently shaking my shoulders. I opened my eyes to see Sam’s beautiful face right in front of me. She was completely naked. “Happy Birthday, Daddy. I know it isn’t until next Thursday, but I got you your present early.” she said. She moved aside to reveal a naked and very nervous Beth right behind her. “Do you like it?”

“Oh Baby Girl. This is the best present you could have ever gotten for me.” I said to her, sincerely. “Well Beth, I guess you know about the special relationship Sam and I have. What do you think of it? Are you okay with it?” I asked her.

“Ahhh, yeah Uncle J. Sam told me and I think it’s great. I can tell how much you love each other and I believe Sam when she told me your special relationship makes your love for each other more special too. Sam and I have had a special kind of relationship too and we are very close. Closer than most sisters would be, I think.” she said, turning to look at Sam with a loving gaze. Sam returned it in kind.

“And I think that is awesome.” I said. “But I want to be absolutely sure you are doing this because you want to do this, not because of Sam or because it is what you think Sam wants. Sam is an amazing person and I love her more than anything.” I said, looking over at Sam. “But she does have a forceful will, an adventurous spirit and a voracious sexual appetite.” I explained everything to Beth like I did to Sam, especially the part about being able to say no to anything.

“I want to do this for me, not Sam or you or anyone else.” she assured me. “And I promise not to tell anyone, or let anyone find out, not even mommy and daddy.”

“I think your dad is going to find out pretty soon anyway, as soon as Sam is done with him.” I said, smiling. Sam really smiled at that. Beth looked surprised that I knew about swapping dads. “Beth, Sam has told me everything since you guys met.” She looked a little taken a back. “I know how you feel Beth, trust me. As I said before, Sam has a way of bending the world around her. My advice is to not worry and enjoy the ride. So far everything has come out great.”

“Okay, I will.” she said, resigned. “So what now? How are we going to start?” she asked excitedly, but still kind of nervous about it.

“Well, for right now we’re going to lie back down in bed and cuddle.” I told her. She looked confused. “You’re really excited right now, and I can tell you’re also a little nervous, right?” I asked. She nodded. “Well, I think sex should come about naturally, when everything feels right. Especially when starting something like this. I want to relax with you and get to know how you feel just snuggling me, without any expectations. Let’s just watch a movie, or some TV shows. Or we can talk. We’re going to take it slow. Is that okay?” I asked.

“Yeah.” she said quickly. I think she was actually relieved that I didn’t want her to have to jump right into it. “Can Sam stay? I want to share it all with her too.”

“Sure, Sam can stay for now. But I want our first real sexual experiences to be alone.” They both looked at me funny when I said that. “I don’t want to exclude Sam forever. In fact, I’m really looking forward to lots of three-ways with both of you. I want us to focus only on each other to start. This relationship’s core needs to be between just the two of us. Can you understand that, both of you?” They both nodded, and I think they understood.

We grabbed some stuff for breakfast we could eat in bed and watched Wall-E together. I was in the middle of two naked 11 year old girls, the luckiest guy in the world. Near the end of the movie I

could tell that Beth was nice and relaxed. I started to very slowly and gently caress her body, letting my hand roam the areas I could reach without disturbing her. Soon she put her hand on my chest and started rubbing it through my chest hair, enjoying the new sensation. Sam picked up on it and as soon as the movie ended she slipped out of bed.

“I’m going to get dressed and take Layla for a walk by myself. I almost never get her alone anymore. Have fun you two.” she said smiling before leaving.

“This is much better Uncle J.” she said softly. “I do feel more comfortable now. It felt like I was trying for force it before, but now it just feels... easier, more natural, I guess.”

“That’s what I was hoping, SweetB.” I said.

“SweetB?” she asked?

I want to have a name for you that only I use, like how I call Sam my Baby Girl.” I explained. “I started thinking of sweetheart or sweetie, but everyone uses those. Sweet Pea sounded good, but I changed Pea to Bee, for Beth.”

“I like it.” she decided. “Now I need one for you. We all call you Uncle J, but you aren’t really our uncle. I’ve always thought of you as someone who is cute, friendly and gentle.” she said as she tried to think of a way to use those. “I know!” she said finally. “I’ve always loved Koala Bears and they are cute, friendly and gentle. So I’m going to call you my K-Bear.”

“That’s a great name, SweetB.” I said, as I leaned forward to kiss her gently on the lips. I withdrew and looked at her. She looked back at me for a second and then leaned forward to kiss me, a little harder and deeper. We kiss each other for a minute or so while our hands explored each other’s bodies. When her hands found my dick she broke the kiss so she could look down at it. “Is that the first erect cock you have ever touched?” I asked. She nodded, wordlessly. Both of



her hands were exploring it and she seemed almost as entranced as Sam was when she first found it. “Well, it’s yours to play with for now, but you can’t take it with you, okay?” I joked.

She giggled. “That’s funny, K-Bear. Sam would hunt me down to get it back. There would be no where safe on the Earth to hide from her then.” she joked and we both laughed. “She told me she’d share it with me but that I had to promise to give it back in good working order. If I broke it she would never forgive me.” she finished, laughing even more.

“Well, go down and take a closer look. Play with it. Explore. If you want to make a man happy... hell, if you want to make a man do anything... you’re holding the key in your soft little hands.” I chuckled. I was trying to make a joke but instead I pretty much summed up the way men work. “Sometime guys joke that the head of the penis is the “little head” and that sometimes all of the blood flows to it and then it does all of the thinking.”

Beth laughed. “Cause all boy’s think about is sex?” I nodded. “That’s what I have heard too. So every time you see a girl you like you start to think about fucking her?” She had finished looking it over and starting to stroke it in her hands. She seemed to have a good technique already developed. Sam must have been coaching her.

“Pretty much.” I confirmed. “I don’t plan on actually doing it or anything. I just wonder what it would be like.”

“What about me? Did you think about fucking me when you first met me?” she said, hopefully.

“Yes, actually. I did.” I confessed. She smiled. “I wouldn’t have before I met Sam, but falling in love with her has kind of skewed my taste in women younger than it used to be. You and Sam are close in age and similar in build. Of course I wondered what these beautiful buns of yours felt like.” I said as I started to squeeze her nice little butt. It was a little plumper than Sam’s and I knew that very soon it

would be attracting a lot of eyes when she walked down the street. “Oh yeah! You do that pretty well, SweetB. Did Sam give you some pointers?”

“Yeah. We used the handle of a brush.” she explained. “Your dick feels much nicer. It soft and warm. And the skin moves around. It’s really neat.”

“Well why don’t you see if you can make me cum.” I suggested. “Start slowly with nice long strokes. You should be able to feel my excitement grow and it will really change right before I cum. I’ll let you know.” She started focusing on the hand job and it didn’t take long. I played with her ass and rubbed all over her sexy little body. “Mmmm. That’s real nice. I’m almost there... ah... yes... here it comes!” She kept tugging as my cock started spewing cum all over. It got all over her hands, but she didn’t stop stroking until my orgasm was over. “That was wonderful, SweetB. Amazing. I can hardly believe it was your first one.”

“Thanks K-Bear. Sam taught me well.” she admitted. “She told me this was probably going to be the first thing we were going to do.” She was looking closely at the cum all over her hands. She rubbed it around a little. Then she brought it up to her face and sniffed at it. I could see she hadn’t ever seen it for real but that Sam had told her about it.

“You don’t have to eat it if you don’t want too.” I let her know. “Sam does, but she says she loves the taste. Some girls do. Others hate it. You can decide for yourself. No one should force you if you don’t want to.”

“I know Sam loves it. She told me all about it. She told me that she loves to have part of you inside of her and that you are part of her.” She seemed to be working herself up to something. “I think it is really special that she does that and I want to feel special like that too.” Suddenly she brought her hand up and quickly licked it, getting a big taste. Then she moved her tongue back and forth in her mouth.

It looked like a wine tasting. “Ahhhh.” she said finally. “I do like it. It is tangy and kind of salty, but I like it.” She proceeded to lick her hands clean and then wiped up the rest that was all over me. She licked that off of her hands too. So sexy to watch. “There. Now you are part of me too! I’m happy that you are inside of me too Unc... K-Bear.” She put her hands on either side of my head and gave me a big, wet kiss.

“I’m happy too. Now let’s shower off and get dressed so everyone doesn’t wonder where we are.” I enjoyed soaping up Beth as much as I do Sam, They really are a lot alike. She seemed to enjoy soaping me up too, spending a lot of time playing with my slippery cock, just like Sam”

“Is that all we’re going to do today?” she asked, looking a little disappointed.

“Of course not, SweetB. Later I get to explore your sexy little body and make you cum too. That made her happy. “We are going to take it slow. I’m sure Sam and you will talk all about this. She can help you figure out what things you want to try next. I’ve seen you with a tail like Sam’s. I assume that means you’ve started training your butt too?”

“Yes. I’m right behind Sam. When she puts in a bigger one I move up to her old one. We like to do it together so she pulls it out of her butt and sticks it right in mine, still warm.”

“Wow! That’s hot.” I said, picturing the scene in my head. “Ummm, wait, where was I? Oh, yeah. Well that means you’ll be ready to try anal right after Sam. It won’t be long, either. Damn! I’m so excited!” I exclaimed, surprising myself.

“Me too! I like it when Sam eats my ass. I want you to do that next!” she insisted.

“Okay, I guess I’ll have dessert early tonight!” I joked, and winked at her.

## Chapter 21: Tidal Wave

We all did our normal Sunday activities, working in the yard, playing some games, playing with Layla. The breeding worked and Layla was due to have puppies in mid-April. Everyone was excited by that. We worked on building a big bed for her to deliver and nurse the puppies. I warned everyone what watching puppies being born is kind of graphic. Tyler was the only one who opted out. As much as he loved Layla he didn't want to see "all that gross stuff." I know the girls were interested in the whole process. I hoped it wouldn't scare them off of having babies one day.

I also checked out the progress on the pool. They had the pool and the hot tub installed and were working on the foundations for the rest. It was coming along well and would be done a little early, in about two weeks.

After that was all done Sam and Beth said they wanted to finish something before dinner and ran back to Sam's room. I knew exactly what I wanted to get finished before dinner. Pete and Jesse wanted me to come over and discuss plans for summer but I begged off, telling them that I had a project I needed to get done and told them I would talk with them later in the week or next weekend. When I got back home I didn't even get the patio door shut before I was attacked by the girls.

"Okay K-Bear. Time to come eat my ass!" Beth demanded.

"Yeah Kaaaay-Beeeeaaaaarr." Sam said, teasing me about the name Beth gave me. Beth gave her a real angry look and Sam stopped smiling, realizing she was actually teasing Beth about the name, not me. "Sorry Beth. K-Bear is a very cute name, I do like it, really." That made Beth smile again. "Go get to it. I'm gonna go have fun with my vibrator while I watch you." I was glad I put the cameras up in my room too, so Sam could watch. It made it even more exciting. "Bye Daddy. Bye SweeetBeeeee." she said, walking away.

“How is she going to watch us?” Beth asked as we headed to my room. I guess she didn’t know about the cameras. I explained that Sam thought it would be nice for times like this. “So you watched Sam and me in her room when we decided to fuck each other’s daddies?” she asked, accusingly. I nodded. She thought for a minute. “I’m kind of mad, but I’m also really turned on knowing that you were masturbating while you watched me fantasize about fucking you. That so.... so..... so hot!” she said, unable to think of another word.

We got naked and hopped up into bed. I started kissing her and slowly worked my tongue in to explore her mouth. She then did the same to mine. I then proceeded to lick, kiss and suck my way all over her body. I went down the front and then turned her over and worked my way back up, like I had done with Sam. Unlike Sam, I didn’t flip her back over. I had her stick her sweet juicy ass up in the air and put her head and chest down, the downward dog position in yoga. I had wonderful access to her from behind.

I proceeded to gently stimulate her and worked my way in to her pussy, building her up. She came before I even got to her pussy. I munched away for a few minutes and then worked up to her asshole. Spreading the cheeks wide she had a nice gape going. The plugs had loosened her up and I was able to work my tongue deep in. Two of Sam’s tiny fingers are about as big as one of mine, so I was able to work my finger all the way in her slippery little pussy and I found her G-spot. I was rubbing her clit with one hand, my tongue was wiggling all around in her ass and then I started to massage her G-spot with my other finger.

Suddenly she screamed in ecstasy and started shaking so much that I almost thought she was having convulsions. She was so overpowered by her orgasm that her sphincter felt like it was trying to rip my tongue out of my mouth. She shuddered and collapsed limply on the bed, shaking a little. She was breathing hard. I climbed up to lay down next to her and hold her. I gently rubbed her back and arms.

I could see she had some kind of super orgasm that completely overwhelmed her and that she just needed some time to recover.

Sam came bursting in the room, naked of course. “Beth. Beth!” she yelled and jumped up on the other side of her and looked her over. “What happened? Is she hurt? Oh God, what have I done! I must have pushed her too much.” Sam was really upset.

“Relax Sam.” I said, calming her down. “She’s not hurt, she just needs a little time.” I tried to explain.

“S-s-sam.” Beth said quietly between breaths. “I’m o-ok-kay. Don’t worry.”

“But why is she like this? What happened to her?” Sam asked, a little calmer.

“If a normal orgasm is like a wave crashing on an ocean beach, she just got hit by a tidal wave.” I said, trying to find a way to explain it. “My tongue was making her ass feel really good and my hand was rubbing her pussy. Then I hit her G-spot and she just got overloaded with sexual stimulation. It triggered a massive multi-orgasm kind of thing. Wave after wave hit her one after the other with no pause in between. At least that’s what I think happened.”

“Wow! That is incredible! Can you do that to me?” Sam asked.

“It may sound good, but I don’t think you actually want this.” I warned her. She frowned. “It really is just too much... too much of a good thing. Eating a piece of chocolate cake is great, right?” She nodded. “Two pieces might be good too, even three. This is like having an entire cake shoved in your mouth at once, faster than you can swallow it. The cake still tastes good, but the taste isn’t important when you start to choke on it.”

“Mmmm.” we heard Beth say. “Chocolate cake sounds pretty good right now.” she said as she looked up at us. It looked like she

was recovering. She looked like she was really worn out though, like she had run a marathon. “That was so wonderful what you did to me K-Bear, but maybe not quite that much next time.” She smiled.

“So you don’t want me to turn it up to 11?” I said and laughed. I saw their puzzled looks and remembered they had never seen Spinal Tap. “You’ll understand after the next movie night.” I said, locking in my next movie choice. “Next time you’ll be able to handle it better, you’ll know what to expect.”

“Well, I got interrupted and didn’t finish my private session. Can you help me out, Daddy?” Sam asked, so nicely.

“Anything for my Baby Girl.” I said as I pulled her on top of me for some 69 action. Beth watched us as we got each other off. Mostly she watched Sam’s very improved technique. She was able to get about three-quarters of the way down my cock now without gagging. She really was slowly improving like she said she would. I made her cum first, not quite able to time it right, but she finished me off very soon after. She took it all in her mouth and then climbed off of me. I looked over to see her dribble half into Beth’s mouth. It was like the fantasy she told me in Florida. These girls were fucking unbelievable.

“Super sister’s share everything, right Sibs?” Sam said after they both swallowed.

“Yep! They sure do, Miss!” Beth replied. I looked at both of them, baffled.

“Since you have pet names for us we decided to have pet names for each other.” Sam informed me. “Sibs is short for ‘Sister Beth’ and Miss is short for ‘My Sister Sam’. Get it?”

“Like the TV Sho... oh, forget it. You have no idea what I’m talking about.” They were so young. “I do really like you pet names though. Let’s get cleaned up and head over to Beth’s house for dinner.



We don't want anyone to come looking for us! Are you ready to get up and walk Beth?"

"Yeah, I think so." she said as she got up. She was a little wobbly, but we all headed to the shower to clean off the smell of sex.

As we dried off I asked Beth something that was bothering me. "Hey SweetB. Do you know why your mom didn't come to see the movie last night? Your dad seemed kind of evasive."

"Oh, yeah, well Grandpa Ken came over and he and mom had some of their special time."

"Special time? What's that?" I asked, intrigued.

"I don't know, that's just what they say when they go off alone when Grandpa Ken comes to visit. It's a little weird. Once I got up to pee in the middle of the night and I thought I saw my dad sleeping in the guest room instead of Grandpa. When I got up in the morning Grandpa was in the guest room and I figured I was dreaming."

Something fell into place in my head. I remember Jess and her dad seemed really extra close to each other in college. Jesse's mom had died of cancer when she was younger. I didn't really think anything of it back then but now I was wondering if Jess' relationship with her dad was a little like my relation with Sam.

## Chapter 22: Special Time

Ken Tanner was a good looking man in his mid-fifties and I could see the resemblance to Jess. He was young when Jess was born. He was devastated when Jess' mom died of brain cancer at the age of 35. Jess was only 11 years old. Ken never remarried and made Jess the center of his life. He came to visit for a few days every month or so but he had been in Australia for 4 months on business. I now understood why he didn't want to wait for his 'special time' with Jess. That's a long time to be apart.

I decided to verify my suspicions while helping Jess clean up in the kitchen after dinner. "Did you enjoy your 'special time' with your dad last night? We missed you at the movie." I said as innocently as I could. Jess' head came up quickly at the mention of 'special time'.

"Ah... Yeah, I did enjoy it." she said, cautiously. "Thanks for asking."

"I understand he was gone for four months." I continued. "That is a long wait for some ah... 'special time' with someone you love." That got a long look from her. I think she knew she had been found out and was wondering where I was going.

"It is a long wait. Um, just how do you know about our 'special time', Jon-Jon?" she asked, using the name she had given me back in college. It didn't catch on and no one used it but her.

"Beth told me, but she doesn't know what 'special time' means. I pieced it together when I remembered how close you and your dad were back in college."

"And you don't mind? It doesn't bother you?" she asked, incredulously. She walked over to me so we could talk quieter.

“It’s none of my business, really. I’m not one to judge. You were only 11 when your mom died and your dad and you only had each other.” I said, letting her know their secret was safe with me.

“Oh Jon!” she said as she came over right in front of me and started to tear up. “We never meant it to happen. One night we were comforting each other after a movie mom really liked came on the TV.” She was starting to cry now and I held my arms open. She hugged me and it was like something she had been holding inside was finally coming out. “It just kind of happened. I look a lot like mom and they hadn’t been intimate for two years, since she started to really go downhill. After it was all over we both felt bad and vowed to never do it again, but we did two weeks later and it just continued after that.”

She calmed down and recomposed herself. “What about Pete?” I asked. “It seems that he knows about it and is okay with it.”

“Yes, Pete knows.” she assured me. “I told him when we first got serious back in college. His first concern was an accidental pregnancy and inbreeding, but dad had a vasectomy before mom even got sick. Pete and dad talked it over and agreed to this kind of once a month arrangement we’ve had ever since. Pete once told me he didn’t mind sharing me because he knew he didn’t have to worry about me running off with another man. I already had another man and he wasn’t going to be running off anywhere.” She smiled.

“That’s very astute.” I said. “Pete always was pretty smart.”

“So you really are completely okay with this?” She asked. “Most people could not deal with the relationship I have with my father.”

“Well...” I said, coming clean. “What would you say if I told you that Sam and I have a special kind of relationship too?”

“I knew it!” she said. “I don’t know how, but I could tell. Just something about how you two interact with each other. You don’t treat her like a child. You treat her like an equal, most of the time. I

thought that was strange but you haven't known each other long. She's also incredibly mature for her age."

"Tell me about it! Sometime she seems more mature than I am!" I said, laughing.

"But when did it start? What about Sam's mother? Did it start before she died?" she asked, wanting to know everything. Time for another big revelation.

"Sam didn't have a mother." I confessed and told her the entire story up until we arrived here.

"Oh Jon-Jon! That's amazing," she exclaimed. "I always knew you were a great guy, and to rescue her like that. You have risked everything, and it must have cost a fortune. How much did it cost? How did you pay for it?"

"It cost \$50K, but that's a bargain when you think about how much it costs to raise a child from birth to 11 years old!" I said. She laughed and nodded agreement. "As for how I paid for it..." I told her the same stuff I told Pete about the money I had.

"Wow." she said, dumbfounded. "Ahhh... well, now is not the time but we need to talk about what you are doing with that mon..." She stopped talking when she saw the look on my face. "Like I said, it's not the time. Ummmm, listen. This may sound like I'm prying too much or that I'm a pervert or something... but Sam... uhhh, how do you..."

"It's okay Jess, I know you're not a pervert... well, not compared to me." I said, getting a grin back. "You are concerned for Sam's welfare, and it does you credit." I explained what Sam and I have done in as unsexy a way as possible. I didn't bring up Beth yet.

"Wow Jon, you have been more careful and gentle then I thought any man could be." she told me. I was glad to know I was doing right

by Sam. “I can see she is in good hands, but I do have one bit of advice... you don’t have to wait for puberty. Just be careful and slow, like you are already doing for her butt and her pussy will be fine.”

“Really?” I asked. “I’ve just heard too many stories of girls who couldn’t have a normal sex life later because...”

“Because the guy didn’t know what he was doing. You do. Trust me, I know it’ll be okay. I’m just fine twenty two years on.”

“She’ll be glad to hear that. She’s been begging me to fuck her properly for months.”

“I’m amazed you haven’t. Jesus, Jon-Jon. How have you been able to hold out.” she asked, not quite believing what she was hearing.

“She gives awesome blowjobs.” I said, quietly. I knew I needed to get everything out in the open with Jesse because I didn’t want her to think I was going behind her back with Beth. “About Beth...” I told her all about Beth and Sam. She smiled like she knew something. “What? What’s got you smiling?”

“Pete was right.” she said. “I knew from the day Beth was born that I wanted her to have a special relationship with Pete, like dad and I have. Pete agreed, but not until the time was right. I thought Beth was still too innocent and not ready but Pete said she wasn’t as innocent as I thought. After she and Sam became so close he was sure they were experimenting with each other but I didn’t believe him. He was right after all.”

“Well, it’s gone farther than that now.” I said and explained about the pact to fuck each other’s dads and what Beth and I had done last night and today. I hoped this wasn’t going too far.

“That’s my girl!” she said when I was done. That made me laugh. “Hey, keep it down! Did you really give her an orgasm so powerful she collapsed and couldn’t move?”

“Yeah. I think it was some kind of super powerful orgasm that some women can have.” I explained as best as I could. “I’ve never seen it before but I have heard of it. I almost thought she was having a seizure or something at first, but then I figured it out. She seems fine now. I hope it didn’t scare her, or Sam since she was watching.”

Jesse started laughing quietly, trying to keep from getting too loud. “Jeez Jon-Jon, you are so naive sometimes! I’ll bet you my favorite dildo that those two are going to spend the next few months trying to do that to each other!” I wasn’t convinced at first but I realized she was probably right. “I’ve gotten there three times in my life. Twice with dad and once with Pete. He was so proud when he did it.” She looked over at him sitting at the table talking with her dad and smiled. “There they are. My two lovers, and I love them both so much, and so differently.” She looked back at me seriously.

“It can work, Jon. With enough love, understanding and respect you can have with Sam what I have with my dad, a special love that can last a lifetime. More importantly you can share her with the right person and not lose her.” She was looking intensely at me then. This was really important to her. “But the most important thing, the thing I am going to make you swear to me right now, is that you have to let her go to find that special someone with no pressure or expectations. It sounds like that stupid saying from high school, but it is true. Don’t push her away, but let her go free and find her way back. Do you swear?” she challenged me.

“Yes, Jess. I swear. This was actually one of the things I considered before Sam and I started. I told her in no uncertain terms that I was her father, not her husband and that we could never be partners in that way. She said she understood and I think she does. I will love her forever but I thought our own ‘special time’ couldn’t last forever. You’ve given me hope that it can, in some ways at least.”

“I’m glad, and I really hope you can make it work as well as dad and I have.” she finished. “Now as for Beth, I’m not upset with you.

Knowing what I know now about Sam and you, I'm happy that you've been able to help Beth along. But I need to insist that Pete is the one to take that final step. Pete needs to be the first to fuck her pussy or her ass." I nodded. "Cool. Now let's not say anything to Pete about this. I'm looking forward to watching Sam seduce him as much as you are. This is going to be so fun to watch!" We both laughed in agreement.

"Well Jon-Jon, it's a school night so Beth is sleeping here tonight, remember? Besides, it sounds like she needs a rest!" She laughed. "I'm sure we'll have a lot more to talk about later. Remember what I said about Sam being ready. Take it slow and gentle, but if you work her up to it over a couple of weeks or a month, she'll be fine. When I think about it, her upbringing in that house explains why she is so mature. She had to grow up so fast, she never got to really be a kid. It's kind of sad but it does mean she is ready emotionally."

"Yeah, she sure is. I know I'm going to enjoy actually doing it immensely, possible more than any other moment in my entire sex life." I said. Jesse nodded. "It'll be nice to not have her bugging me about it too! Hey Jess, before I go..." She turned to look at me. "Would it be okay if I talked to Ken about... uh... you know?" I asked, cautiously.

"Why would you want to talk to dad abo... Ah, yeah." she said as it came to her. "I guess you two do have something in common, eh? Okay. For Sam's sake, and yours. Just not tonight."

"But doesn't he leave in the morning? I don't want to wait until he comes back."

"He leaves after breakfast, so you can talk while I take the kids to school. Pete will have left for work so it will be just you guys."

"Thanks. I'll come see Sam off to school and eat breakfast here."

## Chapter 23: Jurassic Park

I was still kind of horny that night. Maybe it was the talk with Jess and the idea that Sam and I could still be that close in twenty two years. After we settled into bed I started running my fingers through her hair and caressing her face. It was kind of my go-to way to let her know I wanted some sack time. Tonight the response I got was not what I expected.

“Daddy, can we watch Jurassic Park?” she asked.

Where did that come from? “Now?” I asked. She nodded. “Why now? It’s a school night and you’ve already seen it, remember?”

“Yeah, I remember. It was when we were at the beach, before we started... before we became lovers.” she said. She looked away like she was thinking of what to say. “Last week I had a dream about Jurassic Park.”

“It wasn’t a scary dream, was it? You never seem to get scared at stuff. You’re a tough little girl.” I said, kind of proud.

“No, it wasn’t scary. Ummm, you know the young girl and boy in the movie?” she asked.

“Lex and Tim. Yeah. What about them?” I responded.

“Well, in the movie they are in the truck with Dr. Grant when the T-Rex attacks.” she said. I nodded. “Well, Dr. Grant saves them from the T-Rex and you had just saved me, so I felt like I was Lex”

“Awww, thanks Baby Girl.” I said, kind of touched. “It’s nice to know you were thinking of me being the hero and saving you back then.”



“Well, last week my dream was that when they were up in the tree Lex told Dr. Grant that she thought they were going to die and that she didn’t want to die without having sex. She convinces Dr. Grant and they fuck each other in the tree.”

“That sounds like a very exciting dream. What about Tim?” I asked.

“I don’t remember. I don’t think he was... wait. He was there but he was sleeping off the side and didn’t wake up.”

“So you want to watch it so you can re-live it, or remember, or what?” I said, still confused.

“I want to watch it so we can do a fantasy thing like we did in Florida. I’ll be Lex and you are Dr. Grant. Can we?” she asked, hopefully. How could I say no to that? I was 16 when that movie came out and I did have a thing for Lex at the time.

“That kind of fantasy thing is called role-playing. It’s a way a lot of couples spice up their love life. The brain is the most important sex organ, remember?” She nodded. “I’m all for doing stuff like that but we don’t have time to watch the whole movie. How about we just watch that scene?” I suggested.

“Yeah, that would work. I want to be able to remember the scene so we can fantasize about it.”

“Okay, I’ll get it and put it on. But if it is a fantasy it doesn’t really matter how close it matches, right? We’re making up anyway.” She nodded in understanding.

After watching the scene we turned the TV off and sat up against the headboard, kind of like they were resting in the tree. Sam didn’t do anything so I thought I’d get things started. “Well, we’re safe now Lex. You aren’t hurt, are you?” I asked Lex/Sam

“No, I’m okay Dr. Grant. Thank you for saving me! I was so scared. I don’t want to die. I’m too young. There’s lots of things I want to do.” she said, pushing the story ahead. It was a little fast for me, but it was her fantasy so I went with it.

“Call me Alan. Are you sure you’re okay. I better give you the once over and check, just to be safe.” I started looking all over Lex/Sam’s body, pretending there were clothes on her. “You look like you took a hit to your chest. I’m going to take a closer look, okay. I’m going to need to open your shirt.”

“That’s okay, Dr. Gr... Alan.” she said. She was good at this. “I’ve only ever had the family doctor look at my chest like that. But you are a doctor, right?”

“Well, I’m not a medical doctor, but I did learn a lot about anatomy. Does this hurt?” I asked as I pushed down with my fingers, working my way around her abdomen. She shook her head. I moved up to her chest and started around her right breast. Her breasts were just starting to show. “How about up here. This feels tender.”

“Ow. That does hurt a little. Maybe it will feel better if you rub it?” I started to rub around her tit, massaging it slowly. “The other side hurts a little too.” Sam was doing great. I massaged her other tit too. I was starting to get hard. “Why are you shifting around? Are your pants too tight?”

“No, I’m okay Lex. Alright, I think that area is okay.” I said as I pretended to close her shirt. “How about down here?” I said as I started rubbing and examining her legs. I moved up to her thighs. “Ooh. Looks like you’ve got a rash on your thighs here.” I sad rubbing her inner thighs. “We need to pull off your shorts so I can get a better look.” I unbuckled her pretend belt and she lifted her hips as I slid off her pretend shorts. “Oh, yeah. The must have been rubbing or something. Here, I’ve got some lotion. Let me rub it in. It’ll make it feel better.” I said, reaching in my bedside table for some body lotion we sometimes rub on each other. I rubbed the real lotion on

Lex/Sam's thighs as gently and sensuously as I could. "How does that feel, Lex? Better?"

"Oh yes, Alan. They feel much better now. Thank you so much. Hey, it looks like you have some on your legs too. It must be a reaction to some plants. That is strange. Why don't you pull off your shorts too so we can look?" she asked, and proceeded to unbuckle my pretend belt and pull my pretend shorts down. This was really fun. "Yeah, it is all red too. Give me the lotion and I'll put it on your rash, okay?"

"Hey, who's the doctor here?" I asked and started laughing. She did too. "Okay, go ahead. I want to feel better." She rubbed the lotion inside of my thighs too. "Oops. Sorry Alan." she said as she brushed against my balls. "Those boxers don't really hold everything in."

"It's okay Lex. Accidents happen. Hey do I have a rash on my butt?" I asked as I rolled over.

"We better check, but I'm going to have to pull your boxers down. Okay?" she said as she started pulling down my pretend underwear.

"I guess there is no other way, so I guess you have to, right? That feels good, keep rubbing the lotion in." I said as she massaged my butt with the lotion. It reminded me of the time we put suntan lotion on each other. My cock was already hard but that memory seemed to make it even harder.

"Okay. You better check my butt too, Alan." She turned over and actually stuck her butt up in the air a little. "Here, If I do this it'll be easier, right? Oh, I need to push these down too." she said as she pretended to push her pretend panties down.

"Yes it will. Thank you." I rubbed the lotion all over her sweet butt. I was thinking about Lex's butt and being up in that tree. Sam's

little fantasy was really getting me excited too. “Okay, time to turn over. But we better not put our underwear back on. Whatever caused that rash might still be in them.”

“That’s a good idea.” she said as she turned back over. “I’m cold now, hold me closer and keep me warm, okay?”

“Okay Lex. Just cuddle up here. You’re safe now.” I said. Lex/Sam was looking very intently at my hard cock. Since Sam was very well acquainted with it I assumed Lex was curious. “Lex, you keep looking at my penis. Is there’s something wrong with it?”

“Well, not a rash or anything, but it is really big and hard. I’ve never seen one before so I don’t know what they are like. Alan, we might die before morning and I would really like to see what a penis is like before I die. Is it okay if I look at yours?” she asked, so innocently.

“We need to stay relaxed to get through this. If looking at it will relax you, then go ahead.” I said as I leaned back and presented my penis.

“Wow. It is so big!” she said as she reached out and touched it. “The skin is soft too, and moves all around. That’s neat.” She was doing a really go job of imitating an inexperienced girl’s first encounter with a man’s dick. “And these are your balls, right?” she asked as one hand reached down to cup them and fondle them. “They feel really funny. Hey Alan, I think that rash may be affecting me here.” she said exposing her pussy and pointing at it. ”It’s getting all wet. Is that because of the rash? Can you look at it?”

“Okay Lex, I’ll look but I don’t think that’s from the rash.” She moved her butt up by my face, but didn’t let go of my dick. She kept playing with it. I moved in closer. “Let me check and make sure this is okay.” I started probing around her pussy with my finger, sliding over the labia, spreading her juices all over. “Yeah, this is just your vagina excreting some lubricant. There is a lot in here, see?” I said as

I stuck my fingers in one at a time and rubbed them all around. I pulled them out and put my hand up by Lex/Sam's face. "Here, this is what it is like."

"But why is it doing that, Alan. It hasn't done it before. What is the lubricant for? What does it need to lubricate?" she said as she took one of her hands down and started fingering her pussy, getting her fingers all wet.

"Well, the lubricant is to make your vagina slippery for a penis to slide in easier." I said as I reached down and waved my hard dick around a little.

"Oh, I see. So the juices from my vagina are for a penis." she said as she put her hands, wet from her pussy, onto my penis. "And then the penis goes in and out of the vagina like this?" she said as she started to stroke my penis with her hands.

"Exactly. Like this." I said as I stuck my middle finger in her pussy and started fucking her with it.

"Alan. I don't want to die a virgin. Please fuck me! Please!" Lex/Sam begged. I could tell it wasn't just Lex that wanted Alan to fuck her. Sam wanted me to fuck her. She wanted it more than anything and I decided that I would take Jess' advice and fuck Sam as soon as I could get her ready. But not tonight. I thought of another way.

I reached back in the side table and pulled out a small flexible dildo I had gotten for Sam. It was about the width of my thumb and the vibrator I got her. I stuck it under my arm to warm it up. "Okay Lex. If you really want me to I will take your virginity and make you a woman, I will do it. Lean back and open your legs." Lex/Sam did as I asked. "Now close your eyes and relax. I am going to lick your pussy first to make sure you are ready and then I will stick my penis into you. Okay?"

“Oh yes. Do it! Make me a woman before we die!” I closed my eyes and started to eat Lex’s pussy. I love Sam more than anything, but Alan Grant is fucking Lex, not Sam. She was really getting into it and moaning. “Alan! Oh God! I want you to fuck me. Stick your hard cock in me!”

“This may hurt at first, but it will get better, better than you ever imagined.” I pulled the warm dildo out from under my arm and rubbed the tip around Lex’s vulva, imagining it was my cock. Then I slowly slid it in and out, a little deeper each time. I was using my other hand to stroke my cock, synchronizing with the dildo to maximize the effect. “How is this Lex, are you doing okay?”

“Oh, it’s wonderful. This is the most wonderful feeling in the world! Fuck me Alan. Ohhh, what’s happening? I feel so straaaaaaaaa” Lex/Sam started shaking, experiencing Lex’s first orgasm. It pushed me to the edge and I had to cum... but where?

“I’m gonna cum Lex. Oh my God, here it is...” I pulled the dildo out and moved myself between her legs just in time to shoot my load onto her flat, unblemished stomach. “Ahhh, yes!” I said as I finished. I laid down beside Lex/Sam and wrapped my arms around her. “You’re a woman now, Lex. How do you feel?”

Lex/Sam looked at me and smiled. “Oh Alan, I feel incredible, better than ever before. Thank you for rescuing me and taking such good care of me. Hey, what’s this?” she said as she wiped up some of my cum in her fingers. “This is what came out of you? Let me see how it tastes.” She cleaned it all up of course. Sam wouldn’t waste a drop, even role-playing.

“We should get dressed now, before Tim wakes up.” I said as I started pulling on imaginary clothes.

“But Alan, aren’t you worried the rash will come back.” she said, before busting out laughing and grabbing hold of me. “Oh Daddy. That was awesome. I like role-playing. We should do it more! It was

so vivid in my head, I almost thought you did put your cock in me. But I knew you would be bigger and it wouldn't go in that easy. It did feel awesome to have you fucking me, even if it was with a dildo."

"I'm glad you enjoyed it. I liked it too. We should keep an eye out for other stories or movies we want to re-enact. Oh, also some that will work if Beth joins us. We can make a list." I decided. It was fun and made for a much more interesting night than I thought I was going to have. "Well, it's late and it's a school night. Let's get some sleep."

## Chapter 24: Ken Tanner

The next morning Sam was excited to go back to school. She really enjoyed the school she went to with Beth and Tyler. I was very happy that she has a place to thrive instead of going to a school she hated.

“Bye Sam.” I told her as I gave her a hug. “Have fun and learn lots of fun stuff.”

“I will Daddy.” she said before kissing me. “Let’s go Beth. I’ll race you to the car!”

After they left I grabbed some eggs and bacon and sat down next to Ken. I wasn’t sure how to bring this up. How do you ask someone you barely know what it was like to fuck his 11 year old daughter? Better just get to it before it is too late, I figured. “Hey Ken, I, uh...”

“It’s okay JR. Jess told me.” he said, understanding my hesitation. “She told me you figured out about us and that you are in a similar relationship with Sam.” I wasn’t quite sure what to say next but after a few seconds he continued. “Pete is the only other person who knows about Jess and me. We never told anyone else, for reasons I’m sure you understand.” I nodded, soberly. “When Jess first told me I wasn’t real happy about you knowing, and I wasn’t keen on talking to you about it.” I started to talk but he held up his hand to forestall my apology. “Don’t worry. I’ve changed my mind and I’m actually kind of glad now. I realized that having someone I can talk to about this, someone who really understands what I went through, is a blessing. Make yourself comfortable and ask whatever you want. I’ll tell you what I can.” he finished.

I was relieved. Instead of being awkward, Ken had made me very comfortable, made me feel safe. “Thank you so much, Ken.” I started. “I also thought I would never have anyone I could talk to. I gotta tell you, seeing the relationship you and Jess have maintained for



over twenty years has been a huge relief and given me a lot of hope for the future. I know it will be a struggle and that there is a lot that can go wrong. Knowing there is a happy ending out there we can reach if we try makes a big difference.”

“I’m glad we can be a good example for you.” he said, smiling. He was a very friendly person and was well liked by lots of people, for good reason. “Most people think that a relationship like this can only end in disaster, and more often than not it does. But I know there are others who have done it before. I never had the guts to reach out and find any of them, though.”

“So what do you think is it has made it work for you. What is the secret to your success?” I asked.

“Respect.” he said simply. “From the beginning I respected my little Jelly Bean as an equal in the bedroom.” I smiled at Jesse’s pet name. “She wasn’t just there for me and I wasn’t just there for her. We were there for each other. It’s kind of hard to understand, I guess.”

“No, it isn’t actually,” I said. “not for me. You’ve described my relationship with my Baby Girl. In fact I used almost the same words with Sam when we started.” I went on to explain how it all began with Sam and me. Jesse hadn’t told him about Sam’s back story and he was very interested and impressed with how well it has worked out.

“It sounds like you are off to a wonderful start. Your relationship sounds very healthy. If you keep going as you are, you will be able to have what Jess and I have, I just know it”

“I can’t tell you how great that is to hear. One thing I want to know is how you were able to be a dad and discipline her while still being her lover as well. Jess was very well adjusted and responsible when I met her at college.”

“It wasn’t easy. That was probably the trickiest part, actually. I realized that millions of fathers raise willful, temperamental young

girls into responsible women and love them every bit as much as I love Jess. They may not show that love the way we do, but their intense love makes it difficult for them to lay down the law. But they do it. Jess and I had fights, just as any parent and child. She even threatened to play the child molester card a couple of times. She's a smart girl though and realized it would just ruin both of our lives. In the end it was love, respect and trust that won out. The trust went both ways. I trusted her with more and more responsibility as she got older and she trusted me to do what was right for her, even if she didn't like it. Always be truthful and be true to yourself and it will work out for the best."

"Wow Ken." I said, still processing everything he said. "That's like a master class on being a single father raising a child from bratty girl to grown woman. You've given me a lot to think about and I hope I can pick your brain on future visits."

"Of course, JR." he said in his friendly way. "Jess can help you out a lot too. She was there for all of it and her perspective will be very valuable. She should work with Sam too, but I really don't like the idea of more people finding out about it. Sam and Beth are so close that it will only be a matter of time until she finds out. I want Beth to be innocent as long as she can." he said as a grandfather who loves his granddaughter very, very much.

"I don't want to tell you this, but I think I have to. Beth isn't as innocent as you think." His eyes narrowed, wondering what I was hinting at. I told him everything. Everything Sam and Beth have done with each other and their conspiracy to fuck each other's dads. To my surprise he just laughed.

"I should have known, she's Jess' girl after all. I know Jess has plans for Pete and Beth. If anyone can keep it from going wrong, it's her. She has a way of bending the world around her."

"...bending the world around her." I said in unison with Ken when I heard him saying it. He stared at me and I started laughing like

a mad man. “I said the same thing, word for word, about Sam! And it’s true. Maybe we have less control than we thought, Ken. Maybe we have both been ensnared by beautiful little nymphs who control us with their powerful sex magic!” Ken started laughing too.

“Well, if I do it serves you right, dad!” Jess said from the doorway and laughed along as she walked in. “I’m glad to see you two are getting along so well.”

“Oh Jelly Bean,” Ken said, earning a dirty look from Jess for using her pet name. “JR is a great guy and I’m glad he and Sam are here. It’s remarkable how similar their relationship is to ours.”

“I know!” Jess exclaimed. “It’s bizarre, isn’t it? I’m so glad Beth has Sam to help her through this stage.” I gave her a leading look. “And Sam has Beth. Yes Jon, I know. They are helping each other. I can’t wait to see how it goes with Sam and Pete!” she said, excitedly.

“I’m sorry I won’t be here to see it. You two be sure to tell me what happens.” Ken said sighing. “Well, time to hit the road. I need to be at a meeting in Dallas this afternoon.”

“I have to ask you Ken,” I said as we got up. “have you ever thought about spending the night with Beth sometime in the future?”

“Hell yes I’ve thought about it.” Ken laughed. “I’m a man, right!”

“I can attest to that!” Jess said as she gave him a hug and a kiss. “We’ve talked about it but he doesn’t think it will ever happen.”

“Well,” I said, “knowing Sam as I do I wouldn’t be surprised if you find both of them in your bed one night.” He looked surprised. “Bending the world, remember?” I said, grinning.

“I’m still doubt it, but I won’t kick them out, that’s for sure.” he said smiling as he headed out.

“Did that help, Jon-Jon?” she asked walking back in after seeing her dad off. “Are you feeling better about everything?”

“Yes, Jess. I am.” I said soundly. “He suggested I keep asking your advice on dealing with Sam if I have any questions.” She nodded, agreeing. “He also suggested you answer some questions for Sam when she has any in the future.” She was about to say something and I thought I knew what it was. “After Pete is on board and everything is out in the open with all of us. I won’t tell her now because she’d tell Beth in a heartbeat.”

“They are so close. Like sisters. No, like sisters who like each other.” she corrected, smiling. “Did you know they have pet names for each other now?” she asked.

“Sibs and Miss? Yeah, I know. Wanna know what Beth and I call each other when we’re together?” I asked. She nodded. “She’s SweetB, like sweet pea but with a B for Beth. I’m K-Bear since I’m her Koala.”

“That’s so cute. You are like a Koala bear, Jon-Jon.” she teased before giving me a hug. “Thank you for coming into our lives and bringing Sam. I know Pete missed you all of these years. We both did.”

“Pete’s a lucky guy to have you.” I said, kissing Jess on the forehead. Jess has always been attractive but I never really thought of her that way. I always thought of her as the sister I didn’t have. “I don’t think I’ll ever get married, but if I do I hope she’s a lot like you.”

“I’m flattered. Thank you for being there for me all those years ago. You were the one guy friend who didn’t try to get into my pants.” she said. Then she laughed a little. “For a while I actually though you

were gay.” That made me laugh too. “Until I walked in on you and Debbie Schmidt, that is.”

“I haven’t thought of that in a long time.” I said. “She was so pissed off. She thought you and I were doing it and I couldn’t convince her otherwise. She wasn’t a very good fuck anyway.” I remembered. “She wouldn’t even suck my dick.”

“Yeah. Hey is this getting...”

“A little awkward?” I finished. “Yes. I’m heading home. Do you need help cleaning up?”

“No, I’m fine. Go think of Debbie and wack off.” she teased. Not a chance, I thought as I headed home.

## Chapter 25: Homework

The next week flew by. I went to an adult toy store on the other side of town and bought a set of simple dildos increasing in size that Sam could use to gradually prepare her vagina. I told Sam the plan Friday after school. The girls usually did their homework together in Beth's room when they got home from school. I told Sam to come home alone after they were done.

"I'm home Dad!" she bellowed after she closed the door. "What's going on? Why couldn't I bring Beth?"

"Surprise!" I said as I came around the corner. "It's me, Edward Dildo-hands!" I said as I brought my hands out from behind my back. I had all of the dildos sticking out from between my fingers so they made a fan on each hand.

"Are those for me?" she asked, excitedly. I nodded. "Oh, thank you Daddy! Why are there so many?"

"There are different sizes, increasing gradually, like your butt-plugs. I've done a little more research and I discovered that we don't have to wait as long as I thought for your pussy to develop."

"Really!?! You're going to fuck me! Yeah! When? Tonight?" She was so excited. When the time came I hoped I would be good enough to live up to her expectations.

"No, not tonight. You have to finish your homework first." I knew she was going to say she had already done it. As soon as she started to open her mouth I said "Not that homework... This homework!" and I waved the dildos in front of her.

"What?" she said, puzzled.

“You need to slowly stretch your hymen and vagina so I won’t hurt you when we first have vaginal sex.” I said and she looked at me a little funny. “Okay, let me tell you why I’m having you do all of this. Some guys think popping a girl’s cherry is fun. They enjoy the fact that she bleeds and feels some pain. I hate those guys, they only care about themselves. I think a girl’s first time should be a wonderful experience she will treasure forever, not some kind of trauma she has to deal with later.”

“I know you’re not one of those guys, Daddy. I know you would never hurt me.” she said, defending me from myself.

“I would never hurt you on purpose, but once I did hurt a girl by accident.” I admitted. She looked like she didn’t understand. “I’ve been with two virgins before you. The first time we were both barely 15. She didn’t have any pain. There was a tiny bit of blood but she said it didn’t hurt. That might have been because I wasn’t fully grown yet, not even down here.” I said, pointing at my dick.

“Awww, you had a wittle pee-pee.” she teased.

“Hey now!” I shot back, trying to keep from laughing. “It wasn’t as big as it is now, but that doesn’t mean it was tiny!” I did start laughing, but then I got serious again. “The next time I was with a virgin it didn’t go as well. We were in high school. I was a senior and she was a sophomore. I wasn’t careful and gentle. I didn’t know any better. I was a horny 17 year old boy who just wanted to get laid. She said she was ready to go and I just went for it. She started saying it didn’t feel good, but I didn’t stop. I wasn’t paying attention. Then she started crying and I did notice and stopped. I pulled out and when I saw all of the blood I freaked out. She did too.” It was a hard memory to bring up. I was choking up and Sam sat next to me and hugged me. “It took me a while for me to get over it. I’m ashamed to say I never talked to her again, so I don’t even know what happened to her.”

“But you didn’t know, Daddy. I know you wouldn’t have hurt her if you had known. It wasn’t your fault.” she said, wanting me to feel better.

“I know it wasn’t really my fault, it was because we didn’t know better. I still feel that I was irresponsible and a major douche though. But anyway, that experience is why I have been so overly cautious and protective of you.” I admitted to her. “I love you so much and I never want you to experience anything like that. And that is why I want to do this slowly and carefully. Heather was 15. That’s 4 years older than you and she still had a horrible experience. I know now that we can do this if we are careful, even though you are only 11.”

“Okay. I understand. I don’t want to feel bad either. And I really don’t want to make you feel bad.”

“Wow!” I said. “You are more worried about how I feel? Jesus, Sam. You sure are something special, you know that?” She smiled. God, I love her smile. “Okay, start with the smallest one and work your way up by one each night until it starts to get uncomfortable. Then you go back down to the previous one for two nights. Then go back to the bigger one for a night. If it is still uncomfortable, go back down again. Keep alternating like that until the bigger one is comfortable. Then move up to the next one and keep alternating like that until it is comfortable too. Keep repeating until you are ready.”

“I wish all my teachers assigned homework like this!” she said.

“But then I don’t think you’d ever go to school! You’d be here doing your homework all day!” I said before grabbing her and tickling her.

“Stop it, Daddy. Okay, when do I stop? When will I be ready for you?” she asked.

“Let’s go upstairs and find out.” We headed upstairs to the bedroom and put all of the dildos on the bed. I went in the closet and



got one of my old shoes and pulled the laces out. “Okay, we can use this to measure my girth, how big around my dick is.” I explained. I took off my clothes and she did likewise. “Okay, it isn’t hard right now. Do you think you can take care of that, Baby Girl?”

“I think I can handle that, Daddy!” she said as she jumped on top of me, putting her sweet bald pussy right in front of my face. She started going to town on me, sucking my limp dick in and blowing it out. She loved to do that when it was still soft, but it never lasted long. Soon she was bobbing up and down on my fully erect penis. “Okay Daddy.” she said after a while. “I think it is as hard as it is going to get.” She hopped off of me and turned to face me. “What now?”

“Now we measure and compare.” I took the shoelace and wrapped it around. I kept going around and around along it until I went around ten times. Then I tied a knot at that length. “Going around ten times will give a better average and minimize any mistakes. Now we see if we can find which dildo is the closest size.”

“Wait, not yet.” she said in a commanding voice. “I have unfinished business!” she declared before climbing back on top of me and continuing my blowjob. I sure didn’t mind. I grabbed the smallest dildo and started using it on her pussy. It was smaller than her vibrator so it went in quite easily. Her sweet little snatch was almost dripping. I moved the dildo up to her ass and slowly worked it in, using some spit as lube. I licked, sucked, tongued and kissed every part of her beautiful pussy as I worked the dildo in and out of her ass. We were both getting close so I slowed down a little. We had gotten very good at timing so we were able to achieve a simultaneous release. “Okay, now we can test the dildos.” she said after licking her lips.

The biggest dildo I bought was almost perfect, just a tiny bit too big. “I guess I know my dick pretty well, huh?” I said. The next smallest was more than a tiny bit too small. “Looks like this last one is it. You can decide when you’re ready. If you are completely comfortable with the big one then you will have no issues taking me.”

“But I want to be really tight for you! I think I’ll be ready when I’m comfortable with this smaller one.” she said.

“Oh Baby Girl. Don’t you worry. You will be plenty tight, believe me. I don’t have a hard, smooth plastic dick like these cheap dildos. These are just to increase your size, they aren’t made to be pleasurable. They are meant to slide in and out as easy as possible.” I explained. “My dick isn’t smooth and round. It will rub around and give both of us some pleasant sensations. Trust me. When you are comfortable with the big one, then we’ll finally be able ‘fuck properly’ as you like to say.” I said, smiling.

“I can’t wait, Daddy!” she said, grabbing me in a bear hug.

“Well, don’t push yourself, okay?” I told her. “It is important. If you go too fast and injure something inside so you have to see a doctor it will raise all kinds of questions we don’t want asked. If you take it slow and careful then any examination of your vagina will not show someone has been having sex with you. No matter how right this feels to us, it is still illegal and I could still go to jail, remember?”

“Okay Daddy. I’ll go slow and careful. I’m just happy that’s it happening!” she said, still excited. “What about Beth? Can I show her how so she can get her pussy ready too?”

“Well, Beth’s dad is going to be her first, remember.” I reminded her. “I don’t know how big Pete’s dick is. It would still be a good idea for her to start preparing as well. She just won’t know where to stop yet, but I’m sure she’ll find out before she gets there. Time to get dressed and make dinner. It’s movie night, remember?”

## Chapter 26: And Beth Makes Three

As I had planned, the movie was Spinal Tap. Jesse was on Pete's lap in one recliner, I was in the other and the kids were on the couch. Tyler didn't get much out of the movie and ended up playing with Layla on the floor. She had a few more weeks until the puppies were due, but she had slowed down a lot. The girls both started laughing when Nigel Tufnel showed off his amp that went up to 11. We all ate lots of popcorn, but Tyler fed most of his to Layla. I planned to give one of the puppies to Tyler so I could get my dog back. He loved her so much.

"Okay, movie's over. Time for bed." Jesse said as she got up. "Come on Pete. Let's go." she said shaking him awake.

"Hey Pete," I said as he got up. "What's the dirtiest thing said on television in the 60's?" I asked.

"I don't know, JR. What?" he said, yawning.

"Ward, don't you think you were a little hard on the Beaver last night?" I said in my best June Cleaver voice.

He smiled and shook his head back and forth slowly. "I don't get it." "Me either." said the girls.

"Good." said Jesse. "I liked it Jon-Jon. And don't you be too hard on the girls tonight, okay?" she said with a wink knowing smirk that Pete didn't see.

"Yeah, Jon-Jon." the girls said in a teasing voice.

"Why did you have to resurrect that name, Jess?" I lamented. She stuck out her tongue, grabbed Pete by the hand and left. "Okay girls, get upstairs and get ready for bed." I said as I put everything away and cleaned up. After cleaning the kitchen I went up to Sam's

room, but it was empty. That didn't surprise me. I figured we'd all be sleeping in the big bed together. I went into the bedroom to see both girls sitting on the bed across from each other, with their legs crossed in front of them. They were both naked of course. A beautiful sight to behold. In between them was something that looked like a cloth bag.

"Hey girls. What's that?" I asked as I came in the room.

"That's for you, Daddy." Sam said. "You're the first contestant in our new game show called..." Beth joined in and together they said "Test That Tongue!" like a game show host would.

I smiled broadly and said "Anything that involves you two and my tongue sounds good to me!" I meant it. "How does it work?"

"First you put on this hood." Beth said, handing it to me. It was basically a bag with one hole, for my tongue. "Then you lay down on your back and stick your tongue through the hole. Sam and I will put things in front of your tongue for you to lick."

"I think I'm going to like this." I thought out loud. "Wait, what kinds of things do I have to taste?" I didn't think they'd go for anything really gross, but I didn't want to find out the hard way.

"Don't worry, Daddy." Sam soothed. "Just parts of Sibs and me. You have to guess whose body and what it is."

"And what do I win if I get it right?" I asked, intrigued.

"That's a surprise, but you'll like it. Trust me." Sam promised. "Now come over her so we can undress you and put your mask on." Two minutes later I was lying on the carpet with my arms beside me and my tongue sticking out of a hole in a homemade hood. "Here's a real easy one to start, Daddy." Sam said from right in front of me. Soon I felt her lips surround my tongue before she sucked on it for a few seconds. "Ahhh. So what was that?" she asked.

“That was my sweet Baby Girl’s super sweet lips!” I declared. “I like this game. What did I win?”

“Here’s your prize.” she said. Then I felt someone start sucking on my big right toe. After about 5 surprisingly stimulating seconds I heard Beth say “The more difficult the question, the better the prize.” They had really thought this out well. If they could package this game up they could sell millions, if each game came with two sexy 11 year old girls, that is. “Stick out your tongue. Time for the next test.” I did as instructed and I heard some moving around. Suddenly something warm and juicy touched the top of my tongue. I moved my tongue around a little and realized it was definitely a hot 11 year old’s pussy, but which one? It didn’t taste super familiar so I guessed it was Beth.

“Is that Beth’s beautiful bald beaver I taste?” I asked.

“It was Beth’s pussy. Is that what beaver means. Is it a pussy?” Sam asked.

“Yeah, that’s slang for pussy. That’s why the joke I made earlier was funny.” I explained.

“Ohhh, ha ha. I get it... I think. Anyway, that was a little harder so...” I heard her kneel down and then I felt her soft warm lips kiss and suck on my left nipple. Best. Game. Ever. “Okay, you are two for two. Time for test number 3. Tongue out.”

I stuck my tongue out and soon felt something strange. It was a hole of some kind, but not deep. Flat around it, so not an ear or a nostril. I was at a loss and then I saw it, or felt it rather. It was a belly button. But whose? First was Sam, then Beth. “Beth’s belly button.” I guesst, sticking with B for now.

“How did he get that?” Beth said. “How did you know it was me?” she asked.

“Easy, belly button starts with B’s, so I went with Beth.” They giggled. “Actually I guessed.” I confessed. “Sounds like I guessed right and that was a hard one, right?”

“It sure was, Daddy.” Sam said. “Here’s your prize.” As soon as she finished talking I felt some lips engulf my cock. It was so soon after Sam stopped talking that I figured it had to be Beth.

“That feels great, but I don’t want to miss Beth’s first blowjob!” I pointed out.

“Don’t worry. She’s not going to do much more. She wanted to try it without you watching. She’s nervous.” Sam explained.

I understood. I hope she get confident enough to let me watch soon. “Okay. Take your time SweetB. It’s a big step, you don’t have to rush.”

She stopped. “Thanks K-Bear. I’m done for now. I just wanted to try. Okay, on with the game...” It went on for a while. Ear, nipple, nose, toe, elbow, and more. I really liked the taint. I could just reach both a pussy and an asshole with my tongue. The last one was Sam’s asshole. She spread it open as far as she could and with Beth guiding her down she plopped right onto my tongue and it was inside. I stopped playing the game and just started eating her ass like mad. I brought my hands up and started to play with her pussy and titties.

“I...I thi..in..ink he’s wo...wwwwo...won the grannnn...and prizzzzzz...zze Sibssss.” she managed to get out while moaning uncontrollably.

“He sure has Miss. Here’s your grand prize, K-Bear.” she said and my cock was pushed flat against my stomach by her warm, wet snatch. “Mmmmm. That feels so good sliding up and down my pussy!” I had to agree. “I haven’t ever ridden on a horse!” she joked. She got a good rhythm going sliding up and down my cock. I was so ready to go by the end of the game I knew it wouldn’t take

long. I managed to give Sam her second orgasm and pulled back my mouth so I could talk.

“I’m gonna come real soon. God that feels so good, SweetB. You are a natural rider!” She really was. She moved her hips back and forth just right. “Here it comes!” She hopped off and soon I felt a mouth engulf my cock’s head as two hands start to stroke it. I blew a huge load as I pulled the hood off and looked down. It was Beth’s mouth swallowing my load but Sam’s hands were stroking my cock. “That was fucking awesome. You two make a wonderful team. And the weekend has just started! I’m in heaven.”

“Then we must be angels, right Sibs?” Sam said. “Come here and let your fellow angel lick those last couple drops off of your chin.”

The embraced and kissed while I slowly recovered my strength. “Okay girls. Shower and bed. I’m looking forward to sleeping on cloud nine between two heavenly angels tonight!”

## Chapter 27: Two Tongues Tasting Twitching Tweens' Tangy Twats

It was indeed a heavenly night. I don't know if they were having some kind of contest but I woke up several times to find a different hand on my dick. They weren't doing anything, just holding it as they slept. In the morning I woke up to find myself in the middle of class. Sam was giving me a blowjob but she would stop and talk Beth through what she was doing, giving her pointers. It was very clinical, practical and somehow still very hot.

“Okay, I can see his up.” Sam said as she looked up at me. Beth jerked her head up, surprised, looked at me and smiled. Sam was ready to finish her lesson. I was about ready to blow my load too. “Watch how I work my hands and my mouth together. If you get the timing right his dick just starts going crazy and you can take it all in the mouth like I do.” With that she started working it harder, stroking and sucking in a wonderful ballet.

“Hey SweetB, can you come up here?” I asked and pulled Beth up to me. I started to kiss her, our tongues dancing in our mouths. “Suck on my tongue like you're sucking on my dick. Just not too hard. Try to match Sam's strokes down there.” She did just that, sucking my tongue in and out of her sexy wet mouth. I was ready to cum and I knew I didn't need to warn Sam. She probably knew better than I did. Just as I was cumming I grabbed Beth's head and pulled her in close to finish off our kiss. Oh God. Both of them together was amazing!

“Good morning K-Bear. Thank you for letting Sam teach me. I like this school!” she declared. “Sam tells me the homework is fun too.” A big smile there.

“I like this school too. I don't want you to graduate though. Well, I guess we can offer some advanced degrees so you come back.” I laughed at my own joke. They didn't get it. “Never mind.



Breakfast!” I hopped out of bed and put on my robe. “You girls should put on your sleeping gowns in case someone comes by. You won’t need panties though.” I grinned and winked.

After breakfast we cleaned up and headed out back. I wanted to check out the pool. It was almost done. “Look at this. They’ve made a lot of progress.” I observed. “I think it will be done by next weekend. Just in time for Spring Break!”

“Yeah!” the both cheered. “I can put the next phase of my plan for Uncle Pete in motion.” Sam said with a devious glint in her eye.

“Don’t tell me.” I said when she looked like she was going to continue. “I want to be surprised.”

“Why don’t you put up some cameras, K-Bear. Like in the bedrooms so we can watch!” Beth suggested.

“That’s a great idea Sibs!” Sam told her. “I would be so turned on knowing you and Daddy were up there going at it while you were watching!” This was indeed going to be awesome. I didn’t want to put up cameras out here without warning Jess and Pete and that would probably scare Pete out of whatever Sam had planned. I decided I’d tell Jess and let her decide if it was okay to keep Pete in the dark until Sam was finished ensnaring him.

I took Layla to the vet for her final exam before whelping. All three kids wanted to go along, and so we did. The vet explained what would happen and when. Tyler said he would try to be there, and only leave if it got too gross. I got everything together including little collars to tell the puppies apart. First choice of the puppies would go to Sam, since she is Sam. Then Tyler, since he loves Layla soooo much. Then Beth. We didn’t know how many there would be, or if they would all live, but I hoped there would be at least three. I didn’t know who else would want one. I would only give one to someone that I knew could give it a wonderful home. I could sell them but I really didn’t need the money. Maybe I’d let Tyler sell them and keep

the money. I had a feeling he was going to be sharing a lot of the work looking after them while they were growing up.

I grilled some steaks for dinner and everyone came over. Sam helped a lot as she usually does. Beth helped too and Jess thanked me. She said Beth never seemed interested in cooking before Sam and I came. I guess Sam is a good influence. After dinner we had a game night and played Monopoly. Jess won. She did not mess around in that game. A real tycoon. We called it an early night. Pete didn't know why we were stopping so soon but Jess did and she dragged him out.

"Alone at last." I told the girls when we got back up to the bedroom. "Ready to try your first blowjob SweetB?" I asked.

"Yeah, I guess so. Are you going to help me, Sam?" she asked hopefully.

"Nope." said Sam simply. "You're going solo. Don't worry, you can do this." she encouraged. "I'll be cheering you on. You might not hear me though. I'll be behind you and my mouth will be full." she grinned. Everyone laughed.

I got up on the bed, resting on some pillows against the headboard. Beth climbed up between my legs and leaned over my cock. It wasn't fully hard yet and she grasped it in her right hand. She looked at it and then she looked up to me. "Don't stress out SweetB. It's not a school exam. It's just a blowjob. You'll be great and remember that no matter what, I love you."

"Thanks K-Bear. I love you too." With that she bent down and sucked my flaccid cock in her mouth. She didn't play with it like Sam does to get it hard but it was still very effective. She sucked it in and swirled her tongue around it. Then she suck it on the side. Very soon it was hard and she stroked it a few times with her hand. Then she put her mouth over it and sucked it deep in and out. A lot deeper than I thought she would be able to.

“Oh, you are a natural. Wow!” She smiled and went back to work. I don’t know where she learned it all but she was doing more than Sam had done. She could go deeper than Sam and appeared to have no issues gagging at all. It looked like she didn’t have a gag reflex. She licked up and down it, even licked my balls. “You are doing great, SweetB. God, you are good. Why don’t you see how far down you can go.” I had to see if it was true, could she depththroat? Sure enough, she took it all in. Amazing!

Sam came around to look and her jaw dropped. “Sibs! Holy Fucking Shit! You’re depththroating him! All of him. That is incredible!” She went in for a closer look. Then she gave my balls a quick lick and came up to give me a nice sloppy kiss. I could taste Beth’s juices on her face. “How does that feel, Daddy? She’s doing it. She is depththroating you!” She was so amazed and stoked.

“It’s incredible, Baby Girl. Oh SweetB, I’m gonna cum. Oh God, hear it cuuuuuuums!” I finally let go and a huge load shot out of my cock and directly into Beth’s throat. Sam was licking my nipples at the time as well. It took me a minute to catch my breath. “Oh My God, girls. That was absolutely amazing.” They both grinned and hugged each other. “I have never had a blowjob like that, SweetB. You are really a natural. With skills like that you will be able to get any man to do anything.” I joked, but I was only half kidding.

“Thanks K-Bear.” she said before giving me a huge hug. “And thank you Miss for teaching me. Those videos really helped.” So that was it. Sam had shared the videos we downloaded in Florida. I had forgotten about them.

“Okay. Now it is your turn SweetB. Can you lay down on your back Baby Girl and she can lay on top of you.” I arranged them into a nice 69 position with Beth on her knees. Sam was already licking away by the time I got back there with a dildo. “Ready SweetB?” I asked. “Twice the tongues tasting your tangy twat!” I said as I got in position above Sam and joined her. Together we thoroughly licked

and sucked Beth's fun bits many times over. I used the dildo on her ass while I licked her pussy and then I swapped. After about 10 minutes she raised her head and told us to stop.

"I don't think I can cum anymore right now. I feel drained." she said, her sexual appetite fully sated. "Your turn Miss. Let's swap." And they did. Beth and I repeated everything for Sam and soon she too had enough. We showered and went to bed, tired and very happy.

Sunday dawned and we had a lazy morning. Cold cereal and pop-tarts for breakfast. We all snuggled together and watched another classic movie. Animal House would be considered too adult for most 11 years. But these girls? They liked it but they didn't think it was really great, like I did. Something didn't click with their generation. Or it could just be because they're girls. Animal House is more of an immature guy's movie, which is why I liked it so much, of course.

"Okay girls, one more sexual adventure for us this weekend." I said, sounding a little sad. They looked sad too. "But then again, at least we will be able to recover our strength." I joked, but it was actually very true. "We're going to try something I always wanted to do, but was never able to arrange. I couldn't get the women I needed together to do it. You guys are perfect for it." I finished.

"What is it, Daddy?" Sam asked before Beth could. "It'll be fun to do something new for all of us!"

"Well, we're already naked, so let's do this." I said, excited to try it. "Baby Girl, can you lay on your back and put your legs behind your head like you did before?" I asked her. She did. God in Heaven, I love that pose. I pulled her around so her butt was just at the edge of the bed. "Now I need to get hard." I walked up to Sam's wonderful bottom and started rubbing my limp dick around on her pussy. "SweetB, would you like to come up and help?" I asked her. She nodded and climbed up, settling her pussy right over Sam's mouth. Then she started to suck my dick and lick Sam's pussy, alternating between them. Soon I was hard and it was time for the main course.

“Okay, now we do this. Are you okay there Baby Girl? Are your arms and legs sore or strained?” I asked her, wanting to make sure nobody pushed too far.

“Yes Daddy. I feel fine.” she said. “I really want to see what’s next.”

“Well, let’s find out. SweetB, can you stand up, turn around and squat over Sam’s pussy with your pussy. Now smash them together.” She did just that and they were grinding them together in no time, starting to moan. “Well, you sure like that, don’t you girls?” I asked and get too big nods. “Okay, now hold them still, right together and I can see how well this works.” They stopped grinding and held still. From behind it was the most amazing site. Two hairless, plump, juicy, preteen pussies, one on top of the other. And two sweet pink assholes there as well. I didn’t do anything else. I just grabbed my dick and slid it between those two gorgeous pussies. God it felt good. I heard them both gasp in turn and then they started moaning.

“K-Bear! That feels wonderful! It’s like when I was riding you before but better because when you pull back my pussy is smashed into Sam’s.” Beth said.

“I agree, Daddy! This is really wonderful. Oh God, keep going. Don’t stop!” she begged. “Kiss me Sibs! Let’s dance with our tongues!” Sam was enjoying it as well.

They soon found they could do a little grinding and make it even better, if they were careful. They both came at about the same time and I was ready to cum as well. “Okay, I’m ready to cum too. Here it comes...” I didn’t pull out all of the way. I just pulled it back so I was barely in and shot right between their hot little pussies. I knew it would be messy and that was what I wanted. “Ahhh that felt good. But now both of your pussies are all messy with my cum smeared all over. I guess you are going to have to clean each other up!” I told them. They broke their kiss and looked at each other.

“Yeah!” they said together and quickly got back in a 69 position so they could do just that. I went back and forth between them, watching them using their tongues to lick off every bit of cum they could find. Sam took the longest to finish, of course. She was much more thorough.

“That was wonderful, Daddy.” Sam said. That is probably the closest I’m going to get to a real fucking until my pussy is ready. Can we do that again next time?” she asked. Beth nodded.

“And again and again and again. That was absolutely incredible for me too. I’ll be happy to do it as often as your girls want.” We cleaned up and went over to the other house for dinner.

## Chapter 28: Pool Party!

“Did you girls have fun?” Jess asked as we came in. She gave me a wink and I smiled.

“Oh yes, mommy.” Beth said. “It was a very nice weekend. Sam and I learned something new, but it’s our secret.” They both giggled and ran off to Beth’s room.

“They look so happy.” Jess said quietly. “Just what did you guys do? Wait! I don’t think I want to know. That is all your business. I trust you to take care of my little girl.”

“Thanks. If you really want to know you could just watch.” I said flatly. That got a strange look and so I explained about the cameras.

“That’s... that’s... I’m not sure what that is.” she said, thinking it over. “I guess if everyone knows about them then it’s okay.”

“Yeah, both of the girls know. In fact, Beth wants me to put some up in the pool as well.”

“Really? Beth? Why?” She was confused.

“The pool is going to be ready later this week and Sam wants to use it to ensnare Pete. Beth thinks it would be fun to get busy while watching.”

“Ohhh, I’d like to see that too? Would I be able to see it?” she asked, suddenly not as put off by the cameras.

“Yeah.” I told her. “They can be accessed over the local network if you have the right logins and passwords. I’ll give them to you.”

“Wait. You’ll give me all of them. The ones in your bedrooms as well?” She didn’t expect that.

“Yeah. If you are concerned about what unspeakable things Sam and I are doing with your daughter you can look and find out.” I wanted her to be absolutely 100% sure Beth was okay. “Privacy is good, but secrecy is bad. All of the cameras can be turned off in the rooms if someone is uncomfortable with the idea of being watched. Sam thinks it is a big turn on.”

Jess laughed. “Of course she does! And she’s right, if it is consensual. I don’t like spying, but if everyone is on board, I say go for it. So what is Sam planning for Pete?”

“I asked her not to tell me since I want to be surprised. So is it okay with you to set up the cameras in the pool area and record Pete’s seduction? I won’t do it without your approval.”

“Go ahead.” she said. “Pete would approve. Can you record it? I’m sure he’d love to watch it after the fact.”

“Sounds like a plan.” I declared. “As soon as I get a confirmation when the builders will be done we can plan the pool party. Make sure Pete comes. See you later.”

The next day the foreman told me they were going to be finished by Thursday. They had already started filling the pool. I let him know I was going to put in some security cameras and he helped me find good locations. He didn’t know how special these cameras were going to be, and he didn’t need to. That evening at dinner Jess told everyone the kickoff pool party would start Saturday at 10 AM. Everyone was looking forward to it.

That night Sam told me she needed a little help for Saturday. “I have most of it figured out but I need a way to get Aunt Jess to leave. She can’t be there when I... when I do what I need to do with Uncle Pete.”



“If it is because you don’t want Jess to know about it, then don’t worry. She does know.” It’s not often I get to surprise Sam like that.

“What?!? How long has she known? What now. If I can’t fuck Uncle Pete...”

“Who said you couldn’t fuck him?” I asked, bringing her up short. “Jess wants watch too. I told her about the cameras and she wants a recording she can show Pete later.” I chuckled. “Oh, I can’t wait to see his face!”

“But if she knows about that then she knows about Beth and me... and you and me... and Beth and you!” She looked lost.

“Okay, I wasn’t supposed to tell you, but I trust you not to tell Beth.” She swallowed and then nodded accent. “Jess and Grandpa Ken have a relationship just like you and me.” Her eyes widened at that. “They started after Jess’ mom died when she was 11. And they continue to this very day.”

“Really?” she asked, wanting to verify something that seemed so unbelievable. I nodded. “So if they are still doing it does that mean we could...”

“Still have our special relationship when you are grown up and you have a family of your own?” I continued. She nodded. “Yes, we can. It won’t be easy but they have managed to do it.” I relayed everything Jess and Ken told me. “Because of that, Jess and Pete have always planned to continue that with Beth. Pete and Beth will have a special relationship too, if Beth wants it of course.”

“Fuck yeah, she wants it!” Sam exclaimed. “But Beth has no idea. Why haven’t they done anything?”

“They were waiting for Beth to get old enough to be ready.” I explained. “Jess didn’t think she was, but Pete did. He figured out

that you two have been experimenting with each other. He hasn't done anything about it yet, but they both approve. They are happy for Beth that you two have found each other."

"Cool. It will be nice to not have to hide it so much. Well, if Aunt Jess knows, can she help too?" she asked.

"I'm sure she can. Tell me what you need her to do and I'll be sure she does." Sam told me only as much of the plan as we needed to know, so as not to ruin the surprise. Everything was all set when Saturday morning rolled around.

Everyone was at the pool for the grand opening pool kickoff party. The cameras were recording, ready for Sam's plan to go into action. She was wearing her sexy one-piece bathing suit, but then again, everything is sexy on her. When we were eating she accidentally/purposefully shot some mustard on it. "Oh Sh... Crap!" she said. "Beth, look. My suit is messed up. Can I borrow one of yours?" 'This must be Act One' I thought to myself.

"Yeah. My bikini is over there, by the showers. But the tie on the bottom tore off. It is attached with a safety pin."

"Thanks Sibs!" Sam said and started pulling off her suit as she hurried over. I saw Pete take a little peek as she went by. She didn't close the door all the way when she changed and Pete was stealing some glances. So was I. "This will work." she stated as she walked back over in Beth's suit. "What do you think, Daddy?" she asked as she twirled around in front of Pete and me."

"It looks great on you, Baby Girl. Now that we have this pool I guess we're going to be buying some more suits, eh?" I asked, knowing the answer.

"You want me to look good, right Daddy?" she replied. "And I need different kinds so I don't have the same tan lines all over. Time to finish lunch!"

The next phase started after lunch while the girls were playing in the pool. Sam gave Jess and me the signal. "Pete dear. Can you put some more suntan lotion on my back?" Jess asked. She turned over in her lounge chair and laid it flat. She had her head to the pool and untied the back of her top before laying her head on the back of her hands in front of her, looking to the side so she couldn't see in front of her. Pete loved to put lotion on her so he hopped up, straddled her butt and grabbed the lotion. That was my cue.

"Tyler, I think Layla needs to go for a little walk. She's gonna be having the puppies any day. Want to walk her with me?" I asked. He jumped at the chance and we headed out. I didn't get to see the last part in person, but I watched the recording later. I watched it several times in fact.

Beth and Sam were diving for toys on the bottom of the pool. Sam climbed up the ladder right in front of Pete to get some more toys. As soon as she got up her bikini bottom came loose and fell down. "Hey!" she exclaimed to no one in particular, but it did bring Pete's head up to see what was going on. And boy, did he see. My beautiful Baby Girl's sweet wet pussy was just 6 feet in front of him. He couldn't turn away. "Beth! The safety pin came off!" she yelled, but Beth was under the water.

She turned around and bent over, searching the ground for the pin. That allowed her to wave her naked ass and bald pussy around right in front of Pete. He just kind of stared, transfixed. It lasted about 10 seconds. Pete never looked away, although he did keep rubbing in Jess' lotion. "Found it!" Sam exclaimed and stood up. She put on the bikini bottom and pretended to have trouble putting the pin back in. "Uncle Pete. Can you hold this for me?" she asked as she walked up and showed him where to hold it up.

"Uuhhh, Okay Sam. Sure." He held the back of the suit and she let the front fall down exposing the top of her slit while she fiddled

with the pin. Then she pulled it back up and pinned them together. Pete finally let go.

“Oh, thank you Uncle Pete! You are a handy man to have around.” she said and bent over to give him a kiss. She told me later that she quietly said “Looks like you have some drool on your chin.” Then she leaned over and licked the imaginary drool off of his chin. “There, that’s better.” she said louder before turning around and walking back to the pool with the sexiest walk she could do. She turned again. “Thanks again Uncle Pete.” she said, blew him a kiss and dived into the pool. Pete just stood there staring for about 20 seconds.

Jess turned back over then and whispered something to Pete. Then they got up and quietly headed back up to the house. Later she told me what happened. She told him that rubbing in the lotion must have excited him since she could feel his hard on. She suggested they go back up to the house and take care of it. He jumped at the idea.

When I got back from the walk the girls convinced me to watch the video with them. It was amazing. I wish I could have zoomed in all the way onto Pete’s face, but what we did see was pretty awesome. The rest of the pool party was pretty uneventful after Pete and Jesse got back. I saw Pete stealing glances at Sam now and then. She winked at him a couple of times. One time when she caught him looking she did that thing where she licked her finger and pretended it sizzled on her butt.

The next phase was later that night. It was time to try out the hot tub. Pete and Jess arranged to meet me there at 9 for a night time soaking. It was a setup. Sam was in the hot tub by herself, pleasuring herself on one of the waterjets. Beth and I were up in my bed, watching and having fun with each other. Jess told Pete she forgot something as they were heading out the back door. She said she would meet him there, but then went up to their bedroom to watch the camera feed as well.

We watched it all unfold on the cameras. Pete walked into the hot tub enclosure to hear it was already running. Then he heard someone ahead. “Oh yes! Oh God that feels good!” he looked around the wall to see Sam with her eyes closed and her pussy positioned in front of one of the jets. “Thank you for buying this Daddy!” she said. Pete had no idea she was actually telling me for real on the camera.

“You’re welcome, Baby Girl.” I said out loud even though she wasn’t there, before my mouth went back to Beth’s pussy. She was on top of me with my cock deep in her mouth.

Pete watched her for about a minute and I saw him start rubbing his cock. “Oh yes, lick it! Lick me Uncle Pete!” Sam cried. Pete stopped rubbing for about 5 seconds, then he pulled his cock out and started stroking it. “Yes, yes. Oh, let me suck on your hard cock Uncle Pete!” she said louder. Pete started stroking faster. “Didn’t you hear me Uncle Pete?” she asked him then. He looked up at her to see that she was staring right at him and walking across the hot tub. “I can do a much better job than that!” she declared.

She climbed up the ladder and out of the hot tub. She was completely naked of course. She walked over to him. He just stood there, completely still. It was like he was unable to move, and it may have been true. She reached her hands up on either side of his face and pulled him down to kiss her. After about 10 seconds of passionate kissing her hand went down and grabbed his cock. She started slowly stroking it while they continued kissing. She broke the kiss and started walking to one of the lounge chairs, leading Pete by the dick.

She laid him down on the lounge and then kissed him again. Then she kissed her way down his chest and began to lick his cock. Pete was a little bigger than me, but Sam wouldn’t have any problems. She was putting all of the things she had learned to use. I think Pete was close to cumming because she was being careful not to push him over the edge too fast. She had earned this and she was going to make it last. She took a break to lick his nipples once and another time to

kiss him again for a couple of minutes. Then she started sucking him hard, ready for him to cum.

And cum he did! He yelled so loud I thought I heard it through the windows. He came for an impressively long time but Sam kept going until he was drained. She looked him in the eyes as she swirled his cum around in her mouth for a couple of seconds before swallowing it. “Mmm. Not bad, Uncle Pete. I’m kind of partial to Daddy’s though.” His eyes opened wide when he heard that. “Okay, your turn!” she said. She climbed up and was sitting right on his chest with her pussy right in front of his face. “Hungry?” she asked.

Pete didn’t hesitate. He drove right in and ate her tiny little twat like a master. I actually felt a little jealous of the moans and sounds he was getting out of my little Baby Girl. I’d like to think I’m pretty good at eating pussy, but maybe I’m not as good as I thought. “Oh my God! Uncle Pete! You are amazing! Yes. Right there! Yes! Oh, don’t stop! Yeeeeeees!” She was loud when she came too, but I didn’t think anyone would hear, or know what they were hearing.

When she was done she turned around and laid on top of Pete, snuggling against his chest. It was hard to not be jealous. I knew I would always be Sam’s Daddy and hold a special place in her heart. It wouldn’t be fair of me to keep others out. Sam is such a loving, caring, wonderful girl. I know she will not run out of love. If she loves others it doesn’t mean she loves me any less. It is a hard way to live by but I had to do it or we could never have the lasting relationship we both wanted.

“I don’t know why you did this Sam, but right now I don’t care.” Pete confessed. “That was incredible! You are amazing. Your little pussy is so sweet and juicy.”

“Just wait until you taste Beth! Her pussy is sweeter than mine.” Sam told him.

“I knew you two were experimenting. I’m glad Beth found someone like you, Sam. I didn’t know you and JR were doing this too. I don’t blame him. From the way you managed me I’m guessing he didn’t stand a chance either.” He joked.

“Actually we kind of just fell into it together. I did start it, but I didn’t know what I was doing. He made sure I knew everything that was involved before he agreed to continue. He did save me though. If he hadn’t I would have gone through a lot worse.” She shuddered.

“JR saved you? I thought you loved your mom.” Sam proceeded to tell Pete all about how we met and what we’ve been through. It was the first time I had ever heard it from only her point of view. She did understand it all very well, but she made me sound like more of a hero than I thought I was. Beth gave me a surprised look. I guess Sam had never told her everything either. I shrugged and pointed back at the screen so we could keep listening.

“Wow. You have been through a lot in your 11 years.” Pete observed. “So how do you know I’m going to do this with Beth? And if you think that is so, why are you the one with me now?” he asked.

“Beth wants you to be her lover but she didn’t know how to make it happen. Then I had the idea to fuck each other’s daddies.” She declared. “It will be easier for her to get with you now.”

“So Beth and JR are ...”

“Probably doing it right now, or just have.” She finished. “Not real sex in the pussy. Beth and I aren’t ready for that yet. She wants you to be the first to fuck her pussy, just like Daddy will be the first to fuck me!”

“So Jesse has to know about all of this too.” He laughed. “Damn, I love that woman! I guess I should go talk to her and let her know.”

“Oh she knows.” Sam told me. “There are cameras up all around here. Beth suggested it. Aunt Jess recorded it to show you. I bet you can go up and fuck her while you watch it right now! I’m going to go do that with Daddy and Sibs.”

“You look like a little girl, but there is a lot more underneath!” he observed. “And I’m looking forward to discovering more in the future. But I think you’re right. Let’s call it a night.” He kissed her and helped her down. They dressed enough to get back to the houses. “I love you, Sam. I hope that’s okay.”

“It better be Pepper because I love you too!” she responded.

“Pepper?” Pete said, confused.

“That’s my new pet name for you!” Sam told him. “I just thought of it. PEter Peter Pussy EateR. Get it?”

“I do pride myself on my pussy eating skills! Glad you enjoyed it. I’ll think of my pet name for you. Until then, goodnight Sam.” He said as they walked out.



## Chapter 29: The New Normal

Beth turned to me after I turned off the feed. “So mommy knows about all of this?” she asked, surprised.

“Yes. I told her last weekend. She’s okay with it all.” I let her know. “Even with you and your dad. In fact, that was in the plans for a long time. They were just waiting for you to get as old as... as you are.” I finished, almost giving Jess & Ken’s special relationship away. That was for them to reveal in their own time.

“Wow! So I could go do that with daddy right now?” she said.

“Well, tomorrow. You’re dad and mom are busy right now, remember?” I pointed out.

Just then Sam came in and immediately striped off her suit and jumped up in bed. “What did you think? I was thinking about what you guys were doing up here while I was with Pepper.”

“I think you are absolutely amazing, Baby Girl.” I told her. “Pete didn’t stand a chance against your temptations.”

“Yeah Miss. I was jealous, a little. But I also loved watching it. I can’t wait to suck daddy’s dick.” Beth added.

“Well, start the video. I want to see it!” Sam declared. And so we did watch it, twice. Beth asked Sam about what it felt like and it just made her more and more excited to get with Pete tomorrow. We finished the night with another pussy sandwich. This time Sam was on top and I had a dildo up her ass at the same time. Afterwards we all showered and went to bed.

The next morning was very interesting. Jess arranged for Tyler to go play at a friend’s house. Then she made biscuits and gravy and we all agreed to wait until after we ate to talk. The girls whispered to

each other and giggled a lot. That only made the rest of us smile. The girls then helped Jess clean up as Pete and I started chatting in the family room.

“So are you okay with all of this, Pete?” I asked, hoping my friend of 15 years wasn’t mad at me.”

“Yeah JR, I am. I was confused as hell, but Jess walked me through it all. Once I had a clear picture I realized that I would have done a worse job of navigating through your last 6 months than you have.” He admitted. “I can’t get over Sam though. There is something amazing about her.”

“Tell me about it. I told Beth and Ken how it seems Sam can bend the world around her. I no longer try to change it. Hell, I can’t understand it. But accepting it and guiding her has worked out well, so I’m not going to change.”

Pete laughed. “That is pretty much what I do with Jesse too. We’re lucky men, you and I. To have such amazing women in our lives who love us so much. Jesse told me about what you have been doing with the girls, making sure they are prepared for everything and that the experience will be enjoyable for them. I really appreciate you looking out for Beth like that. I would never do anything to hurt her, I love her so much.”

“Well, Jess helped me with that. She has the experience, so she would know. From what they tell me it looks like both girls will be ready in about two weeks, front and back.” I told him, getting a smile in return.

“Front and back, eh?” he said. “Wow! That’s going to be amazing. So tell me the truth. Aren’t you just a little bit jealous of Sam and me? I have to admit I’m a little be jealous of you and Beth.”

“Yeah, of course I’m a little jealous, that’s only natural. But I trust Sam, and Beth... and you. You’ve been able to deal with Ken and Jess for all these years. I know you’ll be able to handle this too.”

“Jesse told me you figured out about Ken. It was difficult at first, but I learned pretty quickly that Jesse’s relationship with her dad did not affect our relationship. She didn’t love me any less.” He didn’t speak for about 10 seconds, but then continued. “That is why I was okay with it when Jesse suggested Beth and I have a similar relationship.”

“Well, buddy. I’m glad you’re my friend. Hell, you’re the brother I wished I had. If Sam is going to be with another man sometimes, I’m glad it is you.”

“Right back at you, JR.”

“Daddy!” Beth called as she ran over to him and jumped in his lap. “Are you happy that I told Sam she could sleep with you?”

“Yes BB, I’m very happy you told Ells to seduce me.” He said.

“Ells?” Sam said. “Is that your name for me? What does it mean?”

“Yes it is, Ells. Three L’s actually, for my Luscious Little Lover!” I said.

“Oh, I love it Pepper!” she said as she came and gave him a hug and a kiss.

“And I love that name for Pete.” Jess said. “He sure is a master pussy eater. I sometimes think that is why I married him!” We laughed. Pete looked smug. “So where does this go from here. I think everyone knows everything now, right?” she asked, thinking about it.

“No quite, Jesse.” Pete said.

“Oh, yeah.” She said, realizing that now was the time. She told Beth all about her relationship with Grandpa Ken. Beth was surprised at first but then seemed happy.

“So that means daddy and I can be like you and Grandpa? So do you have the operation like Grandpa daddy? So you can’t make babies anymore?” she asked, hopefully.

“Yes I do, BB.” Pete told her. “After your mom had Tyler we decided we didn’t want any more kids and the vasectomy is so much easier than condoms. And now it means you and Ells have nothing to worry about.”

“So sleeping arrangements have gotten a lot more complicated now.” I pointed out. “How are we going to do this? I don’t want anyone to feel left out.”

“Maybe a schedule or something? Jess suggested.

“Nope.” Pete said simply. “It’s going to be completely up to the girls. They are free to decide where they want to sleep every night. If their grades start to suffer then they are in their own beds on school nights. But if they can keep their schoolwork up, they have complete control.”

“Yeah!” both girls cried at the same time. “But what about mommy?” Beth said. “Are you going to be in bed with me and daddy, or Sibs?”

“Well, actually I was hoping I could be, if it is alright with you girls.” She said. “I did have a few encounters with other girls in college and I did kind of like it.”

“That’s great!” Sam said. “You can give me some pointers!”

Jess laughed. “From what I’ve seen and heard, I may learn a few things from you, Sam!” Everyone laughed at that. “Beth, what about you?”

“Yeah. It’s okay with me too, mommy. It’ll be fun.”

“Now I am jealous, Pete.” I said. “I enjoy the threesomes with the girls but you will get to have foursomes!”

“Why don’t you and Aunt Jesse sleep together then, Daddy?” Sam asked, innocently.

Pete, Jess and I all started laughing at that. The girls looked confused. “JR and Jesse agreed a long time ago that it would ever work with them.” Pete said. “You guys did go on a date once, right? Very early on.”

“Yeah, we did.” I said. “It was really awkward at first. We couldn’t find anything to talk about. I took her back to the dorm and went up to her room and we kissed.”

“And?” Beth asked. “What happened?”

“Nothing.” Jess said. “Absolutely nothing. We didn’t feel anything for each other. We broke the kiss and looked at each other. Then I said ‘Maybe you should go.’ At the exact same time Jon said ‘Maybe I should go.’ We both started laughing for what seemed like ten minutes, but was probably only one or two.”

“That released all of the dating tension we had been feeling.” I continued. “After that we started talking as just a couple of kids right out of high school. We got along real well and found we had lots of stuff in common. We became good friends and vowed to never let sex or romance come between us. I even set her up with Pete.”

“It’s true.” Pete said. “These two are living proof that a guy and a girl can actually be friends without sex getting in the way. Very few

can. They still talked about sex. Hell, they talked about their relationships with others all the time, intimate details even.”

“So to sum it up, no Sam. No foursomes for your dad, at least not with me.” Jess said. Then she stopped and started thinking. It looked like something was bothering her. “What about Tyler? How can we keep all of this from him?” she asked.

“Oh, Tyler knows.” Beth said. Everyone turned to look at her, shocked. “Yeah. Well, about me and Miss and K-Bear. I don’t know if he knows about Miss and daddy.”

“How did he find out?” Jess asked. “And how do you know he found out?”

“He’s not dumb, mommy. He came in the room once when Sam and I were together. We didn’t hear him. I’m not sure how long he watched us before we noticed.” She explained. “Then later he heard Sam and me talking about our first threesome with K-Bear.”

“Well then.” Jess said. “We might as well tell him the rest, since he is sure to find out about it. He already knows enough to bring everything crashing down so I’m going to have to make sure he doesn’t let anyone else know.”

“Do you think he might want to join in, mommy” Beth asked. “I think he may have been peeking in on Sam and me after he first saw us, but I’m not sure. I bet he is curious.”

“Can I be his first?” Sam asked before anyone else could say anything.

Both Pete and Jess looked like they were going to say something, then stopped and thought for a few seconds. They looked at each other and something went between them with just a gaze. “Might as well be you, Sam.” Jess concluded. “You do have the knack. Just remember

that everything that applies to you girls applies to him. He doesn't have to do anything he doesn't want to do. Understand?"

"Oh yes, Aunt Jess. I don't think I'd need to make him do anything though. He seem like I was."

## Chapter 30: Tyler Joins in the Fun

That night was busy. Beth slept with Pete and Jess. Sam wanted to put camera up in their bedroom, and in Beth's. I told her she had to talk to them. Sam convinced Tyler to sleep over at our house so he could watch Layla, since she would have the puppies soon. It was really so she could try to get him to join the big party too.

After dinner she disappeared with Layla while I got Sam to help clean up. When we were done he asked where Layla was and I told him that she went off with Sam. He headed to Sam's room and I headed to the master bedroom to watch on the cameras. I was recording it for everyone else too, of course. Sam was on her bed with Layla licking her pussy. She had left the door cracked. Tyler heard them as he approached her room and he peeked through the crack. He just watched her and didn't go in. Sam came soon after and then she started to cuddle with Layla.

Layla knew Tyler was there, as dogs do and started whining. "What is it Layla?" Sam asked her. Then she pretended to be surprised to see Tyler. "Oh, hi Tyler. Did you want Layla? You have to come on over here." She said, still naked and holding Layla. When he didn't come right away Sam said "It's okay Tyler. I know you watch Beth and me sometimes. I'm not mad."

He walked over. "You... you're not mad?" he asked.

"No, in fact I like it. It makes me feel special for you to watch. Do you want to see up close?" she offered.

"Ah... okay." He walked closer and climbed up on the bed. Layla licked his face. Sam spread her legs and he crawled up to look. "A girl at school let me see hers, but not up this close. It looks kind of weird."



“Did you show her your pee-pee too?” she asked. He nodded. “Well that looks kind of weird too. Can I see it?”

“Okay.” He said and pulled off his pants. He had a little boner already. Sam was kind of fascinated by it. She’d never seen a little one, I guess.

“Can I touch it? She asked. “You can touch mine if you want.” She asked him.

“Yeah, if I can touch yours. Okay.” They laid side by side and started to touch each other. Tyler was very tentative, poking around a little. Sam just grabbed Tyler’s penis between her thumb and index finger. Then she started to stroke it up and down. “That feels good Sam.” Tyler said. “Can I put my fingers inside of you?”

“Hell yeah, Tyler. It feels good when you do that. If you want you can even kiss it and lick it, like this.” She said before she kissed the top of his penis and then started to lick it. Tyler moaned a little and then slowly put his mouth up to Sam’s pussy and start to lick it. “Yes, Tyler. Like that. More! Ahhhh.” She said. Then she put her mouth over his little dick and started to suck on it. She could easily suck it all in and she seemed to be having fun.”

I was sure having fun, pumping away. I remembered when I was a boy like Tyler and just starting to play with my dick. Oh God how great it would have been to have had a girl like Sam showing me a few things. I really wished I could be Tyler now.

“Hey Tyler.” Sam said after a few minutes. “Want to stick you penis inside of me?” she asked him. Well this wasn’t part of the plan. Not my plan at least. Part of me wanted to stop it. I wanted to be the first in Sam. But then I realized that Tyler’s little dick wasn’t really going to do much to her. She’s had so many small dildos, vibrators and fingers in there. Tyler can’t even cum yet. A little dry orgasm will still feel great for him, but it won’t be the same.

“Ummm. I guess. How?” he asked, lost.

“Let me lay back and you get between my legs. Then stick your penis in the hole.” She directed. He did as she said and fumbled around, trying to get it in. Sam reached down with her hand and guided it in. She gave a little shudder when he pushed all the way in, but not much. “Okay, now go in and out with it.” He started to pump her, looking down, fascinated. “That feels good, right?” she asked. I think she was hoping for more.

“Yes Sam. It feels really good.” He said and kept pumping. “Ohhh, it feels funny. It’s getting tingly.” He said as he stopped.

“Don’t stop. Keep going. The tingle will feel better and better. Trust me.” Tyler started pumping away again, going faster and faster. “That’s it Tyler. Keep going. You’re almost there.”

Thirty seconds later he got there. “Ahhhh.” He said. “What’s happening? That feels weird, but good. I like it. Can we do that again?” he asked Sam after he finished.

“Not right now, but we can later. And you can do it with Beth later too, if you want. You know that Beth and I do this with Uncle J, right?” she asked finally.

“I heard you guys talking about it, but I didn’t know what it was before. It’s really fun. I know why you do it now.” He finished.

“Well, I do that with your daddy too, and so does Beth. But it is really important that no one else knows about it, okay?” she instructed him. “If you don’t tell anyone then we can keep doing it but if anyone else finds out we won’t be able to do it anymore and people will take your mommy and daddy and Uncle J away. So you can’t tell anybody, ever. Okay?” This was probably a lot better coming from Sam than from one of us, I figured. It looked like he understood.

“Okay Sam. It’s our secret.”

“Have you ever let Layla lick your penis like she licks my pussy?” Sam asked

“Yeah, sometimes. She licks my butt too. It feels neat and I think she likes to do it. Is it okay?” he asked, hoping he hadn’t been doing anything wrong.

“Of course it is, Tyler.” Sam said. “As long as she wants to do it, then it is okay. Just don’t make her do anything. In fact, don’t make anybody do anything they don’t want to. Okay?” Sam sure was smart. She had taken everything I told her to heart.

“I would never do anything to hurt Layla” he said, and he meant it. Tyler loved Layla more than anything outside of his family.

“Cool. Okay. Time to get ready for bed. Bath time. Do you want to share a bath tonight?” Sam asked. She wasn’t doing this half-assed. She was truly making Tyler part of our little gang.

“Yeah! That would be fun. Can we use the big tub in Uncle J’s bathroom?” He hadn’t ever used that so he was excited.

“Sure, let’s go.” Sam said, and they were off. I didn’t bother getting dressed. Tyler might as well get used to it. There were no cameras in the bathrooms so this little session of theirs would be private. “Hey Daddy. Can we take a bath in the big tub tonight?” Sam asked as she came in. They were both naked.

“Sure, go ahead. Have fun. Did you have fun with Sam, Tyler? You know its okay, right?”

“Yes I did, Uncle J. and Sam told me everyone was doing it so it is okay. Are we going to do anything together?” he asked. He was an open slate, everything was new.

“Not together, Tyler. Some boys like to do things with other boys, but I don’t. We might both do something with Sam or Beth or both someday. Is that something you think you’d like?” I couldn’t help but think of turning Sam into a little spit roast.

“Yeah, that sounds like fun.” Tyler said.

“Fuck yeah it does!” Sam exclaimed. “I can’t wait! After our bath?” she asked.

“Well, the bed its big enough. We might as well all sleep in it tonight. Even Layla. We’ll watch a movie and see what happens then.” I said. And so we did. We all climbed in bed together with Layla at our feet. Sam was in the middle and she cuddled with Tyler. Maybe she was excited to have someone like a brother since she had been an only child. We watched Iron Man. Sam played with Tyler’s penis a little while watching the movie and he played with her pussy a little too. When the movie was over I told them it was all up to them.

“Tyler, I want you to fuck me again... that means to put your penis in me again.” Sam requested. “This time from behind while I suck on Daddy’s dick. How about you put it in my butt?”

“In your butt!” Tyler said. “Eww, isn’t it all poopy in there?” he asked.

“No. Daddy taught me how to keep it really clean.” She assured him. “Daddy and Beth even stick their tongues in my butt!”

“No way!” said Tyler.

“I’ll prove it.” She said before laying on her back, pulling her legs up and spreading her ass cheeks. “Want a little snack, Daddy?” she said and giggled.

“Sure thing Baby Girl. Tyler, come and look up close. See how it is clean inside? No poop.” Then I jammed my tongue in there and started eating her sweet ass while Tyler watched, enthralled.

“Come here, Tyler.” Sam called. She put him on top of her in a 69 position. “No you lick my pussy while Daddy eats my ass. I get to suck your dick!” she said, before engulfing his little dick in her mouth. Tyler watched me for a few more seconds and then started to lick Sam’s pussy.

“Tyler, stick your fingers in her pussy hole and move them in and out while you lick her pussy. She’ll really like that!” I told him before returning to her delectable butt-hole.

“Are you ready to stick your dick in my butt now Tyler” Sam asked after a few minutes.

“Sure. I’ll try.” Tyler said. Sam’s asshole was nice and slick with my spit, his little dick should have no problems getting in there. She flipped herself around so she was kneeling over my hard cock and her ass was all ready for Tyler. She started sucking my dick as Tyler positioned himself behind her. “Okay.” He said. “I’m gonna stick it in now.” He held his hard little dick in his hand and aimed it at Sam’s ass. He pushed it in a little and back out. Then in a little more and back out. Soon he was pumping away and had a big smile. “Wow! This is great! I like fucking your ass, Sam!” he said. Hearing that come out of a little boy who wasn’t even 8 yet was enough to put me over.

“Oh God. Here it comes Baby Girl.” I warned her.

I didn’t expect her to pull her mouth off and keep pumping. She moved her head aside and said “Look Tyler. This is what happens when Daddy cums.” Tyler moved his head to the side just as I started to shoot my load. Sam let two waves go before putting her mouth back on and swallowing the rest. “I like to eat it but I wanted you to be able to see.” She told him before proceeding to lick up the rest.

“Ahhhh. It feels funny again!” Tyler yelled as he had another little dry orgasm. Sam pulled away and put her head back there again, looking for something to come out.

“Tyler’s too young to make sperm yet, Sam.” I told her. “So he doesn’t cum yet. He does feel the orgasm though. It feels good, right Tyler?”

“Yeah, it does, Uncle J.” he confirmed. “When I get older I’ll shoot out that white stuff out of my penis too?” he asked.

“Yep, in about 3 or 4 years I would think.” I told him. “Your dick will get bigger then too. Your balls will get bigger and drop down too. That’s when it will start hurting more if someone kicks you there, so be careful.”

“Wow! Will my penis get as big as yours? That sure is big!” he said.

“Actually, my penis is just about average. Some guys have much bigger ones.” I admitted.

“Your penis is just right for me, Daddy.” She said, making me feel better. “I’m glad it’s not bigger or I’d never be able to deep throat you. I’m getting really close. Did you see?”

“I did see. I’m really impressed you’ve been able to improve so much.” I praised her. I was really impressed. “You can be very determined, Baby Girl. Okay, are we ready for bed now? After sex is usually where we cuddle and hold each other, Tyler. We’ll all get in a row. I’ll spoon Sam. Sam will spoon you. And then you can spoon Layla.” Everyone nodded and we all went to sleep holding each other tight.

## Chapter 31: Partners

The next morning we all ate breakfast at our house. I invited Pete, Jess and Beth as soon as they got up. Beth was really excited to hear what Sam and I had done with Tyler last night. Jess was amazed it had gone so fast. “Sam sure knows how to get men going, doesn’t she? And boys!” she observed. “Tyler seems to be fully on board. It sounds like he has a huge crush on Sam now. She is all he can talk about this morning. Layla is going to get jealous!” she joked.

“She does have a way. I was really impressed with how instructive she was. It’s all recorded. You should watch it.” I told her. Then I laughed a little. “Sam wants you guys to put cameras up in your house. She wanted to watch you with Beth last night.”

“I’ll talk to Pete. That’s not a bad idea. You have this all locked down and secure, right Jon? I sure don’t want this stuff getting out!” she said, suddenly worried.

“Don’t worry Jess. I used to do this stuff for a living, remember?” I assured her. “It’s all secure and only accessible from inside. All the videos are encrypted. If we shut the power off there is no way anyone can recovery it without my keys and password, and I guard those dearly.”

“Okay. I’ll trust you. I want to put a queen bed in Beth’s room. We don’t know who will be in there when. We can do that this week. Pete’s back at work tomorrow but the kids are off for the week.”

“We should do something fun this week. How about the zoo, or children’s museums.” I suggested. “Hey Pete!” I called across the room. “Can’t you take off some days this week? We should do something with the kids.”

“I’d love to, JR, but I can’t. Too much going on at the office.” He told us. “We’re in the middle of a big project. You guys go

though. You and the kids shouldn't miss out just because I have to work."

"That sucks!" I said. "I forgot how much working on deadlines like that used to make life such a pain."

"There's a way you could fix all of that, Jon." Jess said, cautiously. "Start your own company and make your own rules."

"So now is the time to talk about this, eh?" I said, looking at her wryly. "I don't want to deal with all of that corporate crap. That's why I don't worry about investing my money. It really doesn't mean that much to me. I'm not looking to fill my life with things. I want to fill it with the people that I love and sharing experiences with them."

"I'm not saying you should start a company to make a bunch of money. You could start a not-for-profit company. You could use that money to help people, to help the little guys. Have you heard of the maker movement?" she asked.

"Yeah, of course. I do like the stuff those people are doing. They are doing stuff because they want to and because it's cool, not to make money. I guess that is something I could get behind." Jess might be on to something, I thought.

"Pete used to talk about it all the time. He wanted to get involved but he didn't have time because of work. He didn't want to take away from time at home with us." She observed. "A lot of that stuff is going on in the Bay area, your old stomping grounds."

"Well, I'm not going back there." I said. I never wanted to go back there.

"I don't think you should. The maker movement is spreading out across the country. You could start something here in Austin." She suggested. "Austin is a tech town after all. There will be a lot of interest. You start the place but you don't have to be involved in the



day to day operations. Let someone else run it. You hire Pete to be your... your lieutenant, someone to make sure your plans are carried out. Like a right hand man. Then you keep writing your books.”

“Would Pete go for that? I don’t want something to come between us. I don’t want him to work for me.” I finally decided. “How about we are co-founders. Pete and I get 49.9% each and your dad gets 0.2%. I trust him and that way he can break any ties if Pete and I don’t see eye to eye.”

“But how can you be co-founders. We have nothing to put in.” she said.

“Do you remember when Pete loaned me \$10 junior year?” I asked her.

“Yeah. So?”

“So I never paid him back and I said I’d pay him 10% interest per month.” I said.

“Jon-Jon.” She said in a warning voice. “What are you trying to do?”

“It’s just by my calculations I owe Pete about \$10M now.” I finished. “Wow, I really should have paid him back. Oh well. A debt is a debt and I always pay my debts.”

“So what!” she said, incredulous. “You’re just going to give Pete \$10 million bucks?”

“Well, if it would be okay I thought I’d just give him 49.9% of a company I am going to start instead. Do you think he would mind?”

She smiled at me and shook her head. “You are fucking insane, do you know that? Just how much money do you have?”

“I think it’s about \$25M or so. I figured I’d keep \$5M back just in case and to provide for Sam if anything happens to me. The rest I’ll put into this not-for-profit company you’ve talked me into. Pete and I can draw salaries. But he has to do all of the crappy shit I don’t like to do, like going to meetings.” I thought this just might work. “Oh, and it won’t be a full time job, of course. I want us to have lots of vacation time. I like to travel and I think you guys should too. Sometimes together of course or the girls would never forgive us.”

“How can you just give away all of that money? That’s crazy!” she was truly dumbfounded.

“No Jess. That’s the point. Crazy would be letting that money control me. Your idea to use it to help other nerds like Pete and me, that’s not crazy. That’s smart.” I was starting to like this idea. I hoped I could talk them into it.

“How can you just give away all that money?” She asked again, still shocked.

“It’s the ultimate maker move. Make a place for makers to make. This was your idea, remember?” I pointed out.

“Oh, yeah.” she said, remembering. “So all of that money means nothing to you?”

“Less than nothing. I think of it as a burden. I didn’t get in this for the money.” I told her. “You remember me back then. I just wanted to play with computers and stuff. I loved the challenge. I told you about my accident and everything, right?” I asked, not sure what I told Pete and her.

“Just the basics, where, when and why.” She said.

“Then let me tell you what happened to me and how it affected me. Oh, and who... never mind.” I gave up trying to make a joke. “I had the accident because I was an idiot, of course. My life was so

crazy that I had to do something crazier just to feel different. I didn't think about anyone else. I did not consider any potential consequences of my actions. I look back and think about how stupid and ignorant I was. I hit a deer, which is bad enough. But it could have been someone on a bike, or a car broken down on the side of the road, or a 16 year old kid learning how to drive. I fucked myself up pretty good, but I got off easy compared to what could have happened." Just thinking about it again made me shudder.

"We were all young and stupid once, Jon." She said.

"Younger and stupider maybe, but you were already so much more mature than I was back then. You just got even more so." I told her.

"Well, you've caught up and I think you may have passed me. If I had all that money I'd end up bankrupt in a couple of years like most lotto winners."

"Maybe, but I doubt it. I think you'd get through it." I told her, and I really thought she would have. "I had to grow up and mature in a hurry after the accident. It changed everything. I felt like a different person. Nothing mattered anymore... the money, the toys, the women. Well, maybe not the women." I joked with a devilish grin. That got a chuckle out of her. "That's why I just took off and traveled the world. I was running away from my past, and I actually had the money to do it. I could have kept running forever but I learned a lot in my travels. I learned about other cultures, other people and the different ways they live. The way we live in this country is bat shit crazy to most of the world."

I continued. "I decided I wanted to do something that matters, I wanted to make a difference. Climate change is affecting the rest of the world a lot more than it affects us here in America. So I decided to document what was happening here in the hopes that people in this country would care about themselves at least. I still plan to do that. I was going to release one for each state and do all 50 at once. Now I

think I'll put out the ones I have and then do the rest one at time as they are finished."

"That does make more sense." She said. "You'll get better exposure that way. Each new release will renew interest in the old ones."

"Maybe you can be my publicist." I half-joked. She politely shook her head. "Well, your idea of a not-for-profit company to promote makers doing more with less would be another great way to make a difference. The fact that Pete is a great match is just the icing on the cake."

"We can talk to him when he gets home tonight. For now, let's go do something fun with the kids." She concluded.

We went to the zoo and had a good time. I started to think Sam did have some kind of sex powers because there seemed to be a lot more animals mating than usual. It was probably because it was Spring, but I did still have my suspicions. All the kids really got a kick out of the monkeys. They were fucking each other like mad. Most of the parents were trying to shield their kids' eyes and hurry them off. Our kids were pointing and laughing, and the girls were actually rating the males' performance. I almost expected them to hold up numbered cards with scores.

Jess' big SUV has three rows of seats. On the way home Tyler was all the way in the back and the girls begged us to let me sit between them in the second row. Jess finally caved in, but ended up regretting it. I was in the middle and the girls were on either side of me. They unzipped my pants and gave me a nice blow job on the way home. At first Jess seemed to be a little upset but she started laughing after a while. "Jesus Jon-Jon! People in other cars can't see what the girls are doing but that goofy grin on your face is going to attract attention." Tyler was mad he couldn't see by Jess wouldn't let him unbuckle. I used my hands on each of the girls, fingering them until they came too. In the end it was Beth who went all the way down and

took my load in the back of her throat. “Are you done now?” Jess asked.

“Yes Mommy.” Beth said. “Thank you. Those monkeys got me really horny. I feel really sorry for the girl monkeys though. They finish so fast the girls can’t be satisfied.”

“Sex works a little different in the animal kingdom.” Jess told her. “Very few species besides humans have sex just for fun. The monkeys do it that way because that is what their brains tell them to do. They don’t feel good or bad about it.”

“Well I felt real good about that!” Sam said. “I wish I could get a taste of that. I guess I’ll wait until tonight.”

We stopped by the store to get some groceries and headed back to make dinner.

Jess and I talked to Pete as soon as he got home. “Hey Pete.” I said. “How was work? Did it suck as much as usual?”

“Of course it sucked. Why should that change?” he said, bitterly.

“Jess thinks you should quit, and I agree. What do you think?” I teased him.

“What the fuck are you talking about JR? Are you nuts? I can’t just up and quit. What would we do for money?” He was very confused. I explained everything Jess and I had talked about, founding the company as equal partners. “And you expect me to just accept \$10M from you like that? I can’t do that.” He decided. Stubborn.

“No, Pete. I’m not giving you a cent.” I tried to explain. “I don’t want anyone to own this company. I’ll put in the money to start it, but I want the company, or some foundation, or whatever to own it. I don’t know how it’ll work but we’ll get some lawyers to set it all up.

We'll each control almost half with Ken as the tiebreaker. We each draw a salary or something for our income, but we don't own any of it."

"So you're donating \$20M, not investing it. Well, that's different." He said. He thought about it for about 30 seconds. "And you think this is a good idea, Jess?" He asked her.

"Yes I do." She confirmed. "I know you've wanted to do this maker stuff, but you haven't wanted to take time away from me and kids. Now you won't have to. You can do it all."

"Okay. I'm in. How soon can we get it going? When can I quit my job?" He asked. I think he was excited to get out of that place.

"Put in your notice tomorrow if you want. There is stuff to do and I'm going to have to hire people to do it. I can hire you to deal with them so I won't have to!" I said, smiling.

He shook his head back and forth slowly. "Dumping it on me already?" he joked. "Okay, let's do this, partner." He held out his hand to shake. I grabbed his hand and then pulled him into a hug. "Partner." I repeated.

We asked Pete about cameras in the house. "Sure." He said. "How soon? I want to watch Beth and Tyler their first time. Boy, that sounded kind of creepy, didn't it"

Jess laughed. "Then we're both creepy because I was thinking the same thing!"

"I bought a bunch extra as backups when I bought the others." I told them. "If any of the installed ones fail I want to be able to swap in an identical model so I don't have to redo anything. I'll put them up tomorrow. We can upgrade Beth's bed at the same time. What's the sleeping plan for tonight?"

“Beth with you. Sam and Tyler with us.” Jess said. She took a big breath and sighed. “This is going to be weird. Tyler... what will he want to do?”

“He knows that nobody does anything they don’t want to do.” Pete said. “If you don’t want to do anything with him, then he’ll just have Sam. He won’t mind, that’s for sure. He’s got a huge crush on her.”

“I know.” Jess said. “I think that’s what I’ll do then. I don’t know about later, but for now that will work.”

And so it was for the first night. Beth and I had our first full night together, just the two of us. She really loves giving head, and Damn! She is so good at it. She even laid on her back with her head over the edge of the bed so I could fuck her mouth. I love Sam to death, but until I can fuck her pussy or her ass, Beth is the most fun in the sack.

In the other house Sam got to eat a grown woman’s pussy. She told me later that it was so much different than Beth. Jess doesn’t shave completely. She does all around her pussy but leaves a little trimmed bush on top. Sam liked it. She said Jess blew Pete while Tyler took her from behind, in both holes. I think she’s enjoying all of the attention Tyler is giving her now. She said everyone enjoyed it and they tried to cuddle all night but the queen bed wasn’t big enough so Tyler slept in his own room.

The next day Pete went to work to turn in his notice. It was decided to just move the queen from the master bedroom into Beth’s and get a king for in here. I set up all of the cameras and tested them.

Pete came home with a box of stuff from work. He said they didn’t need him work out the next two weeks, but he would get paid for them. He said that was fairly standard practice there and he wasn’t offended. In fact he was kind of hoping that is what they would do so he wouldn’t have to go back.

Tyler had been watching Layla and told me she was acting funny. It was time to have puppies. We got Layla into her whelping bed and called the vet. He said everything sounded fine and that Layla knew what to do. We should call if anything looked wrong. It was going to take a while so we just ordered out for dinner and watched some movies in the theater since Layla's bed was close by.

We watched a movie, ate dinner and watched another movie before Layla started to deliver her first. She had five puppies: two males, a female, another male and the last was female. The two males I named Hans and Franz, in honor of the SNL skit. The last male I named Buster, after the dog in Toy Story. The females I named Patti and Velvet. I named Patti after Patti Boyd, the real-life inspiration for Layla from Derick and the Dominos.

I told all the kids Sam had first choice, then Tyler, then Beth. I also told them not to choose yet, that they should wait until they were weened and ready to leave Layla. By then their personalities would be apparent. I had named the puppies myself, as place holders, not their final names. The kids would each choose the name for their puppy.

Bye the time all of the excitement was over it was past the normal bedtime. No one wanted to get too adventurous in bed that night so everyone slept in their own rooms. Sam slept with me of course, but we were tired and just slept. It was nice to have her in my arms again, though.

The next day Pete and I started working on starting our company. We found a good law firm and set up a meeting for the following week. Until we could get something setup I just paid Pete the same salary we was getting before, but I paid 6 months in advance so I didn't have to worry about it. I figured someone else would be able to take care of it after that. We couldn't decide whether to buy an existing building or build new. Neither one of us wanted to move so we wanted someplace reasonably close by. We ended up finding a



place 5 miles away that would work for now, at least to get everything off the ground. We hoped that we would outgrow it within two years.

Tonight was going to be the big night for Beth and Tyler. The rest of us just stayed in our own beds. I assumed Jess and Pete were going to fuck while watching just like Sam and I were planning. Everything was probably too much for Tyler and Beth because when they climbed into bed they just played and talked. We had told them that it was all up to them, that they didn't have to do anything. And they didn't do anything... that night.

## Chapter 32: Horny Potter

“I don’t think they’re going to do anything tonight, Baby Girl. How about another fantasy?” I suggested.

“Oh, yeah. I have one I have been wanting to do.” she said excitedly. “Let’s do Harry Potter.” I sure liked that idea. I think everyone has fantasized to that.

“I’m Harry and you’re Hermione? Or Ginny maybe?” I asked.

“Well, you’re Harry, but I’m Luna Lovegood.” She said, surprising me. “Are you ready for some good lovin’?”

“Oh yeah! I like Luna. How do we start?” I asked.

“Well, Luna is taking a bath in that bathroom nobody goes in.” she started. “The one with Moaning Myrtle. Harry sneaks in with his invisibility cloak. He starts to stroke his dick. Lay down and close your eyes Daddy. Just imagine you’re there. ‘Why are you using your hand, Harry? Don’t you have a Handy Helper?’ Luna asks.”

“‘What’s a Handy Helper?’ Harry asks. ‘And how did you know it was me? Can you see me?’” I say, stroking my dick like Harry.

“‘I can’t see all of you. Just your dick. It’s my special glasses, remember? I put an enchantment on them so I can see everyone’s dick, like there was a hole in their pants. It’s amazing the things you see.’ Luna says.” Sam continued “‘I’ll give you a pair. I know you don’t want to see dicks, so I’ll enchant them so you can see all of the girls’ boobs. Do you like mine?’ Luna asks you, noticing how much you are looking at her hot little mouthfuls of fun.”

“‘Wow.’ I tell her. ‘That would be awesome. But how did you know it was me if you could only see my dick?’ I wonder.” This was

really fun. Sam had quite an imagination. Especially when she turned it to sex.

“Oh Harry, I’d know your dick anywhere!’ she says. ‘Besides, I don’t know anyone else with an invisibility cloak.’ She points out.”

“Oh, yeah. I didn’t think of that. So back to my first question, what is a Handy Helper?’ I ask her.”

“It’s an enchanted tube that turns into a real pussy when you hold it in your hands.’ She says. ‘Like the Phriendly Phallus some girls have.’ And she pulls out something that looks like the most lifelike dildo you have ever seen. ‘By the way, I’m kind of bored with the shape of this one. Do you mind if I change it to your dick, Harry?’ she asks you, looking down lustfully at the hard cock still in your hands.”

“Ummm, sure, I guess.’ I say.”

“She touches the Phriend to your cock, pulls out her wand and points it at them. ‘Cockulus Conjoinus’ she says, invoking a spell you’ve never heard of. A band of light surrounds them and tightens up until it disappears. The Phriend starts to glow and then the glow stops. You see it now looks like an exact duplicate of yours. ‘There.’ She says. ‘Let’s see how it worked.’ She brings your doppledonger up to her mouth and licks it.” Then I felt Sam’s tongue start to lick my real cock. In my mind I saw Luna licking Dildo Harry. “How was that?’ she asks.”

“Glenda’s glorious gash!’ I exclaim. ‘That’s fucking amazing, Luna! So now I feel everything that it feels?’ I ask, dumbfounded.” This fantasy she was directing was incredible. I hoped I was going in the direction she wanted. I couldn’t wait to see where it led.

“Of course. The good...’ she says before sticking it in her mouth and sucking on it for a few seconds.” Sam then wrapped her beautiful lips around my real cock and sucked it for a little bit.

“‘Ahhh. And the not so good.’ She says as she plunges it into a sink full of cold water. You feel your own dick get a little cold and both start to shrink and get soft. She pulls it out and waves your floppy cock double back and forth, laughing. ‘Oh, I do like your dick, Harry. I’m going to have lots of fun with it. It’ll be fun for you too, I promise. I almost forgot, do you want your cum to shoot out of your real dick or this one? Most guys want it to come out of the Phriend so they don’t mess up their underwear. You never know when you’re going to be called to duty.’ She laughed again.”

“‘Well, have it come out of that then. It does make sense.’ I conclude.”

“‘Luna points her wand at it and says “Spoogify!” There, that’ll do it.’” I fucking lost it at spoogify. We laughed for two minutes straight.

“‘So you can just start playing with my dick anytime? Don’t I get any say so?’ I ask her, partly worried, partly turned on as hell.”

“‘Yup. Anytime. So you better be a good boy, Harry and do what I say. It would be a shame if Filch confiscated it. I hear he uses them himself and we wouldn’t want that, would we?’ she says and starts giggling.” Wow! That went a direction I didn’t expect. A little domination, huh? Interesting.

“‘Fuck no! I don’t want that!’ I say, terrified. ‘What do you want? I’ll do it, anything. Just don’t let Filch have it.’ I start to shake in fear.” I say and laugh. She laughs too.

“‘Oh, nothing crazy, Harry. You see, I’ve wanted to see what some of the other Gryffindors’ dicks are like. I want you to buy a Handy Helper and bring it to me. I’ll pair it with my little puss-puss here. Then you get your friends to give it a try so I can give them a try. Hmmm... Ron of course. Fred and George. Might as well get all of the Weaslys. Dean, Shamus, even Neville. In exchange, I’ll let you take a tour of whomever you want. I’m sure I can get Hermione and

Ginny. Chow, Hannah. Oh, the Patil sisters. I'm not a harsh mistress Harry. Just help me and I'll help you. How does that sound?' Luna finally asks. I bet I know what answer Harry is going to have, right Daddy?' she said, breaking character.

"I think I can arrange that Luna. You're right. Once I get the Handy Helper we'll be on a more equal footing. I think I'm really going to enjoy this!' I say."

"I'm sure you will, Harry. But just remember, I know the spell to disconnect myself. You are going to stay connected until I'm satisfied. Can you satisfy me Harry?' she asks, lustfully. She walks up to you and kisses you."

"I think I can do that, Luna.' I tell her when we break the kiss. Hey Sam, what happens if both the real dick and the copy are used at the same time?" I ask her, not wanting to mess up her fantasy.

"Hmmm. I didn't think of that, Daddy. I guess it would just feel like you have two dicks. I bet it would be awesome. Magical, I guess you might say." She said and started laughing.

"Now I can satisfy you twice as much, Luna!' I tell her as I lay her on the side of the tub and start to eat out her pussy." Sam puts her pussy in front of my face and I start licking her.

"Don't forget this, Harry.' Luna says as she reaches back with the Phriend and starts to stick it in her ass. At the same time she starts to suck your real cock." Sam starts to suck me for real going almost all the way down. I reach in the end table and grab a smaller dildo and start to push it in and out of her ass. We came together pretty soon. I was so looking forward to being able to fuck her for real. Soon.

After we finished Sam climbed off and continued the fantasy. "I almost forgot to tell you Harry, you can see what is going on in the room your cock's twin is in. The spell is 'Dildoculus'. You will be

able to control your view, moving it around the room. That should be fun in the locker room or the girls' dorm, right Harry?' She tells you."

"Yes it will, Harry thinks. 'Thanks Luna. That will be fun. Where can I buy a Handy Helper?' I ask."

"'There is a certain shop in Diagon Alley, but I don't think you could get in there. Check with Fred and George. If they don't have one, I'm sure they know where to find one.' She tells you."

"Wow Sam!" I tell her. "How did you come up with this? This is amazing! I'm really curious about the domination aspect. Did that just come to you?"

"It did just come to me." She said. "I just thought since Luna seemed so easy going and laid-back that there must be something under the surface that no one sees. The overall story just came naturally, I guess. I imagined what kind of stuff teenagers with access to magic would do. They'd do a magical version of sexting, right? Why send a picture of your dick when you can send a working copy?" She smirked. Genius. My Baby Girl was a perverted genius. And she was all mine!

"Okay, I'm beat for now. We are DEFINITELY going to continue this fantasy. Let's get some sleep. And from now on whenever I'm going to cum I'm going to grab my wand and yell 'Spoogify!'"

"You can use that spell on me any time you want, Daddy!" she said before cuddling up next to me.

## Chapter 33: Beth and Tyler

“Daddy, wake up. Wake up!” I hear Sam tell me as she shakes me awake.

“Okay, okay. I’m up. What’s so important?” I ask her.

“Look at the TV. The feed from Beth’s room. Tyler’s finally doing something.” She was very excited for some reason. Looking forward to a threesome with them, maybe. On the screen I could see that Beth was on her back, still asleep. Her little titties were exposed and Tyler was tentatively poking them with his finger. Beth’s beautiful little titties were just starting to come in. They were fucking gorgeous. Just right to suck in your mouth. And she had nice nipples too. They were getting hard with Tyler’s attention.

“I bet he’s going to suck on them!” Sam said. “I love sucking on them. They are so wonderful.” Sure enough, pretty soon Tyler leaned over and licked her nipples. Then he started to suck on them. He reached down and started rubbing his dick. “Oh, I wish I was there to suck on his little dick. It is sooo cute.”

“Wait your turn, Baby Girl. Plenty of time.” Beth started to moan and she moved her hand down to her pussy and started to rub it slowly. Tyler pulled the sheet off so he could watch. After a few minutes he got on his knees and moved up to start rubbing his hard dick all over one of Beth’s nipples while using his other hand on her other nipple. Beth slowly opened her eyes and took in the scene.

“Do you like my titties, Tyler?” she asked, surprising him. “Don’t stop what you are doing. I like it.” She said and started rubbing her pussy harder. After a few minutes she brought one hand up and moved it to Tyler’s penis. He moved his hand away and she started playing with it. Tyler moved his free hand down to her pussy and started playing with it. “Kiss my, Tyler.” Beth told him. “Kiss you big sister while you play with her pussy!” Tyler didn’t need to be

told twice. He leaned forward and they we locked in a deep French kiss, exploring each other's mouth.

"I love you Beth." He said when they finished. "You've always looked out for me. Now we're playing in a fun new way. I love playing with you." It was so cute. Siblings at their best.

"Well now I want to play with your dick more. Come lay on top of me." She told him. Tyler hopped up and Beth looked at his dick up close while he examined her pussy. She pinched it and rolled it between her fingers. Like Sam, she seem fascinated by how little it was. After a while she kissed it a little, then began to lick it up and down. She circled it with her tongue. Finally she started to suck on it. Just the head at first, then moving down more and move. It was so small she was able to keep her tongue out and lick his balls while the entire rest of his dick was in her mouth.

"Oh Wow! Sis, that is amazing. That feels so good, don't stop!" Tyler had been poking around Beth's pussy and started to rub it with his little fingers. Then he started to lick it. Sam had taught him a few tricks and he wasn't just licking like a dog lapping water any more. He licked around the hole and then jammed his little tongue in as far as it would go, which wasn't far. He sucked on her clit a little too.

"Oh, that! Yes Tyler. Keep doing that! Oh yeah... almost... there...." She said haltingly while sucking his dick. Then she made it. "Yes! Oh yes! Tyler, suck your big sisters pussy! Oh yeah. Now cum for my Tyler. Cum in my mouth." She sucked him hard and fast now.

Tyler started to shake and finally reached orgasm. Beth kept on sucking, not realizing what happened. "Beth!" Tyler said finally as he tried to pull his dick away. "Stop Beth, it's starting to hurt." Beth stopped and looked at his dick funny. "My dick doesn't shoot out white stuff like Uncle J or daddy."



“Oh.” Beth said. “I didn’t know that. But you did cum right?” she asked, making sure she did get him there.

“Oh yeah, Sis. You were great. I really liked how you sucked it all in and tickled my balls with your tongue. That was neat.” he told his sister. “So can I stick my dick inside of you now?” he asked, wanting to keep going.

“Can you do that again so fast?” she asked.

“I think so. But let’s get breakfast first. I’m hungry. I want to check on the puppies too. We can do it later, okay?”

“Okay, Little Bro. Give me a big hug and go get dressed.”

“Well Sam. What did you think?” I asked as she climbed down off of me. I just finished making her cum for the second time. She finished me off early and then watched Beth and Tyler while I ate her out.

“It was nice. They do love each other. I can’t wait to be with both of them. Let’s get dressed and get breakfast too. We can see the puppies together.

After breakfast all of the kids went down to see the puppies. They were all coming along great. Still just hairy little fat sausages at this point, but they were growing and Layla was taking great care of them. Spring Break was almost over so we all hung out at the pool again for the day. Since the privacy fence was up we all just went naked around the pool. It was kind of weird seeing Pete and Jess just walking around naked, and for them to see me. We’d all watched each other fucking each other’s kids though, so we got over it quick.

“This pool is great!” Jess said. “Very good idea, Sam. We’re going to need that shade up soon though. It’s only April and it’s already getting hot.”

“It is supposed to go up pretty easy.” I said. “We can try it later. Hey, Pete, what do you know about those drones that people can buy now.”

“A little bit.” he said. “What do you want to know?”

“Those things can have cameras, right?” I asked. Pete nodded. “Well, I think we need a rule then. No sex out here. Nudity is fine. People do that all of the time. I don’t want someone recording us doing anything with the kids and reporting it.”

“Yeah, I agree.” Pete said. “Better safe than sorry. I wouldn’t worry about the kids playing around. Kids do that. But nothing with adults and kids outside. Agreed.”

After lunch we all noticed that Beth and Tyler had gone off. No one wanted to wait for the recording so we watched it live in the living room. Kind of surreal, actually. Nobody planned it, but we took a big step that day. In Beth’s bedroom the siblings were back in a 69 position, getting each other aroused for the next step. In the living room Sam was on my lap in a recliner and she started to play with my dick. That got Pete and Jess to start fooling around on the couch. I had never been in the room with them at sexy time.

In the bedroom Beth laid on her back and brought her legs up behind her arms, giving Tyler full access. He started by licking her pussy and then her asshole. I guess he had gotten over that hang-up. Then he brought his dick up and stuck it in Beth’s pussy and started to fuck her. In the living room I had Sam on her back with her legs held together up straight and her butt on the arm of the couch. I was fucking her thigh gap, sliding up and down that wet little pussy. Jess’ pussy was above her face while Jess was sucking off Pete at the other end of the couch.

Pete and I caught each other’s eye and we both looked a little freaked out. We shrugged at each other. Pete grabbed Jess’ head and started fucking her mouth harder. I reached forward and played with

Sam's nipples. But I could look straight ahead and see Jess' asshole right in front of me with her wet cunt below, Sam's tongue darting all around it. I hadn't thought about fucking Jess for over 15 years, since before our one and only date. Watching my daughter eat her pussy three feet in front of me brought the thought back into my head.

In the bedroom Tyler had moved on to fucking Beth's ass and they both seemed to be enjoying it. He was even playing with her titties. On the couch Sam was sucking me off and Pete was pounding Jess as she layed below him on her back. I think Sam was trying to time it to all finish together. When Pete was about to cum he pulled out and brought his cock up to Jess to suck him off. Sam then started going into overdrive to make me cum at about the same time.

We finished and Sam stood up as Pete got off of Jess. Jess then stood up and went over to Sam. I guess they had shared Pete's load with a kiss before, but Jess didn't know that Sam still had my load in her mouth. They started kissing and I could see their tongues start stirring the cum in each other's mouth. Then Jess' eyes popped open when she realized Sam had just shared my load into her mouth. She was looking away from Pete and Pete did not know. Her eyes darted to me to get my expression. My expression was pretty much shock. I didn't know Sam was going to do this. Jess didn't stop, she just kept going as if nothing had happened. They finished and broke their kiss. "Ah, thank you Sam." Jess said calmly. "That was quite a surprise."

"Sure thing AJ." Sam said. I guess that was for Aunt Jess. "I'm just trying to share the love." And then it hit me. Sam wanted Jess and me to have sex, to bring everything together. She was trying to bend the world again, and I was one of the ones getting bent. Jess was also, but I didn't think Sam could manipulate Jess so easily. I did not know what was going to happen. What did I want to happen? If you asked 30 minutes ago I would have wanted things to stay as they are. But now, after watching Jess' asshole wink at me for 10 minutes? I wasn't so sure.

I looked at the screen to see what was going on in the bedroom and saw that the kids were just heading out the door. We turned to look up the hall and saw them running down to us. Everyone was naked and everyone had just had sex. “Daddy, Mommy. What did you think? Did you see us?” Tyler asked.

“Yeah.” Beth said. “Were you watching?”

“You bet we were, Sibs!” Sam said. We were busy ourselves out here. Watching you two made everyone horny!” The kids laughed. The adults chuckled, nervously.

“Of course we watched you guys.” Jess said finally. “I’m so happy that you two love each other so much and that you now have a new way to love that makes you both so happy.”

“Well, everyone looks like they are hot and sweaty.” I said. “Let’s all go jump in the pool. Shower first though, kids!” They grabbed some clothes to wear on the way to the pool. That was inconvenient, having to dress to go between the house and the pool. Jess put on a robe and headed out after them. We always wanted an adult by the pool when the kids were there. Accidents happen. That left Pete and me. “Well, that was different.” I said, trying to start a conversation.

“Yeah, that’s one word for it.” He said, slowly. “You know, I’ve seen you fucking my daughter on video. There’s nothing new to see. It’s just different somehow in person. I think I’ll get over it though. What about you?”

“Yeah, that about sums it up for me, too. But I am also dealing with Jess.” I said. He looked at me and nodded. Understanding. “Pete, I don’t ever want to keep anything from you. We’re best buds and that means I have to be honest. It was real weird staring at Jess’ asshole while my daughter ate her pussy just three feet in front of me. You know my feelings for Jess. I love her half to death, as a friend. I

would say like a sister, but as we've just witnessed, that doesn't mean sex won't be involved." I joked. Pete laughed too.

"I do know how you feel about her, and how she feels about you. I have to admit that I have been jealous of you two in the past. Jealous of the connection you two have. Sometimes in college you seemed closer to her than I did. Anyway, that's all in the past. I trust that you aren't going to steal my wife, JR. And I trust her." He concluded.

"Well, don't trust Sam." I said and explained what happened.

"Damn, but she is something, that Sam of yours!" Pete said, laughing. "I wish I could have seen Jesse's face when she realized she had your spunk in her mouth." He was taking it better than thought. "God's honest truth, JR? It doesn't bother me. Hell, it wouldn't bother me if you fucked her. Assuming she wanted it, of course." I couldn't believe he was saying this.

"It wouldn't bother you! What the fuck Pete. Why not?" I didn't understand.

"You haven't been married. We share something that is a lot stronger than sex. And don't forget, I've shared her with Ken for over 12 years. I am okay with that because I understand their relationship and I respect Ken. I know he'll do right by her. I think I understand your relationship too. And I respect you, that you'll do right by her also. I know you would never hurt her, and that is what would really bother me."

"Damn Pete! I don't know if I could be as confident as you in a situation like this. I honestly didn't expect this, or want this to go further. I don't think Jess does either. I'm relieved to know it wouldn't ruin our relationship if it did."

"Now you just have to get married so I can fuck your wife!" he joked. Pete is one of a kind.



## Chapter 34: Knocking on the Back Door

Spring break was over. It just seemed to go by so quick. It was Sunday night. Just Sam and me in my bed tonight. Beth was with Pete and Jess. Tyler was in his room. He didn't seem to care for the cuddly stuff very much. He just like the sex. He might as well have been in a college fraternity.

"I've got a surprise for you tonight, Daddy." Sam said after she climbed into bed. Then she turned around and I saw she had in a butt-plug and there was a tag hanging from where she normally attached the tail. "Read the tag, Daddy." She loved doing this kind of thing, and I loved it too. I read the tag: "UAIA: United Asshole Inspection Agency – The UAIA has determined that this Asshole is ready for use. Please use with caution." I laughed uproariously at the tag she had made. "Time to pull the plug!" And so I did. I carefully pulled out the largest butt-plug I had given her. She was holding her ass open and it was gaping more than enough to make me concur with the UAIA: This asshole was ready. I put two fingers in to hold it as I jammed my tongue in and ate her sweet ass for a few minutes.

"Are you sure you're ready for this?" I asked when I finished. She looked directly in my eyes with a huge grin on her face and nodded her head slowly three times. I reached in the side table and grabbed some lube. "Here's this in case you need it. I don't think you will. Your anus is well prepared and you shouldn't feel any pain. But if it does feel uncomfortable, you stop and let me know, okay?" I advised her.

"Okay Daddy, I will. I've had bunches of dildos and butt-plugs up there for months. Even Tyler." She observed.

"That's true. You got a lot of physical experience." I agreed. "But this will be different. This is me, not a toy. You've been looking forward to this for a really long time. I want this to be extra special

for you. This is the first time you will actually fuck me and feel me inside of you. It can be overwhelming sometimes.”

“How is that? What makes it so different?” she asked, wanting to know more.

“You know how sometimes masturbating can feel really, really good?” I asked and she nodded. “And if we’re honest, sometimes it can feel better than being with someone, right?” She agreed, reluctantly. “But the total experience is so much better if you are with someone you really care about, and who really cares about you. It is the difference between having sex and making love.”

“I think I understand. Having sex feels good to the body, but making love feels good for the soul, right?” she said, once again showing a wisdom far beyond her 11 years of age.

“Nailed it, Baby Girl.” She smiled. “I knew guys who were separated from the person they loved. They could just masturbate and feel good. It might feel even better to find a local one-night-stand or find a prostitute. But the guys who really loved the other person would much rather have phone sex than go find someone else, even though it wouldn’t feel as good physically. It was better because they were sharing that experience and it made it more special. Remember, the brain is the most important sex organ, and in this case that part of the brain is the part we call the romantic heart.”

“Okay. I understand. So what does that mean for us now, for my first time having anal sex?” she asked, getting to the heart of the matter.

“Well, I could just flip you over, pull your ass in the air and jam my dick in. Your ass is prepared enough that it wouldn’t physically hurt. But it wouldn’t be special. We’re going to share this experience in the most intimate, loving way possible.” I propped myself up with some pillows behind me. “Come sit in my lap, Baby Girl. That’s it. Put your legs on either side and hug me.” We embraced and I held her



for over a minute, while her breathing got slower and she relaxed. Then I whispered softly in her ear. "I love you more than anything in the world, or any world. You will always be uppermost in my heart and I would do anything for you."

"And I love you more than anything too, Daddy. Not just because you rescued me from a life of misery, or because you have given me a wonderful new life with friends and... and ... and my new family." She said, tearing up. I knew she was talking about Beth. They really had become like sisters. "I don't love you because of what you have done but because of who you are. You don't hide anything from me. You have let me completely into your soul and made a home for me there. No matter what happens, I will always love you more than you know."

I was crying. She was crying. It was the most powerful emotional connection I have ever felt with anyone. More powerful than I even imagined was possible. We just held each other for what seemed like forever, letting the emotions engulf us and bind us together.

When we finally recovered she pulled her head back, tears gone and eyes filling with lust. "And now I want you to join me in the most intimate expression of love. I want to feel you inside of me Daddy. I want you to feel my physical body surrounding you, just as my soul surrounds your soul. Fuck me Daddy. Fuck your sweet Baby Girl in the ass!" Wow! How can she be so perfect? Then she leaned forward and kissed me with the most passionate kiss I have ever experienced in my life. It was like our souls were dancing with each other in our mouths.

My dick began to rise. No foreplay needed. I reached my hand around her, spread her sweet little cheeks and began to rub her beautiful little asshole. I put a finger in, then another. She was still a little dry. I brought my hand up to my face but somehow I knew to offer it to her first. She gave me a lustful look as she slowly spit into my palm. When she finished I spit into it as well and she brought a

finger up to stir our saliva together. Then she leaned forward to kiss me again as I used our mingled spit to lube her up.

When I finished she reached her hand around and grabbed my rock hard cock. She stroked it up and down a few times before lifting herself up a little and positioning it at her asshole. She moved it around a little, spreading the lubricating spit over the head. Then she settled down and I felt my dick pressing into her ass. I had to use all of my self-control to keep from thrusting my dick in, but I just held still and left all the control to her.

She settled down a little more and her ass was slowly opening. She raised herself up a little and then back down a little lower. She did this four times and each time my cock pushed a little farther in. Then I felt her breath in deeper and settle down harder. Suddenly my cock popped in and went about two inches deep. She let out her breath and kissed me again. She raised herself an inch, then down two inches. Up and down with slow progressive strokes going deeper and deeper. Kissing me the entire time. And finally one last drop and I was balls deep. Bottomed out.

She broke our kiss, looked me in the eyes with a mixture of all-encompassing love and lustful satisfaction. "I did it, Daddy. You are inside of me as far as you can go. I love you so much." Then she leaned forward and hugged me for about thirty seconds. I felt her experimenting a little bit, moving around a little and clenching her sphincter. The she broke our hug and leaned back on her hands. She started moving up and down, slow short movements at first but gradually increasing in speed and length. Within a couple of minutes I was ready to nut. "Oh Daddy. This feels so good! I'm gonna cum Daddy! I'm cumming!" At the same time I let go and started to fill her little ass with my load. We held each other as it passed, slowly coming down.

"So you didn't want to swallow it this time?" I said, teasing her.

“Not the first time, no. I wanted you to cum inside of me. I could feel your cock pulsing in my ass. It was so sexy! I can still feel you in there. I don’t want to let it go. I want to keep your cock inside of me.” She said, enjoying the intimacy and not wanting it to end.

“Well, I can’t leave it in there forever, but it is okay for now.” I told her. I slowly worked my way down so I was lying flat on the bed. I put a pillow under my head and she rested her head on her hands, crossed on my chest. We fell asleep like that, continuing our embrace, my cock still in her ass.

## Chapter 35: Make it Right

The next morning Sam was beside me with my arms around her. I love spooning her little body, holding her close. Her ass had leaked overnight and there was a wet spot on the bed, but it had mostly dried. I hadn't realized before just how nice it was for her to always swallow. The bed was always clean. I extracted myself and went to take my morning piss. I came back in to see Sam looking at me and smiling. Her smile could melt a glacier, turn the darkest sky bright. She was my everything.

“Don't tell anyone else about the tag Daddy, okay? Beth is going to use it with Pepper when she is ready. That should be this weekend since she's ready for this plug now. Pepper is going to be so happy.”

“Okay, I'll keep that part a secret. But you need to get ready for school, okay. Spring break is over. Let's hop in the shower.” Sam said her butt felt great, no pain at all. The training worked. So of course I plugged that sweet little ass while we were in the shower. She's so small and light it was easy to pick her up facing me with her legs over my arms. I slid my cock right in there and she bounced back and forth like she was on a swing. She did swallow it this time. What a way to start the day!

A quick little breakfast and we headed over to the other house. Of course Sam immediately went off with Beth to tell her all about last night even though they were leaving in less than 5 minutes. “What was that all about?” Jess asked as she finished packing their lunches. She always packed Sam's lunch too and wouldn't let me compensate her. She said it was so easy to make one more since she was already making the other two.

“Sam got one of her wishes fulfilled last night.” I said. “I guess you could say it was wish number two.” I joked and started laughing.

“Well good for her. That means Beth won’t be far ‘behind’.” she said, making her own joke. I laughed at it too.

“Good one. Yeah. Tell Pete he should be ready for a special treat this weekend.” I told her, thinking about what a smile that would put on his face. “I think wish number one will be fulfilled soon. I’ve told her to be careful preparing for that and to make absolutely sure she is ready. By the way. I know Pete is a little more... uh...”

“Well armed?” she suggested, smiling. “Not as much as you’d think, so Sam and Beth tell me. I know you guys are hung up on that kind of stuff, but from what I can tell there is a little bias getting in the way.” She said. I didn’t have a clue what she was talking about and I guess the look on my face made that apparent. “I mean that a lot of guys see their own equipment as a little lacking and the other guys as more ... capable. In truth I don’t think there is much difference. I mean I haven’t gotten out a ruler and measured you guys, but you aren’t that far apart. The girls will be fine, don’t worry.”

“Okay, I’ll trust your assessment. Where is Pete, anyway?” I asked. I hadn’t seen him this morning.

“He’s out in the garage. He bought a few man toys and he’s playing.” She joked.

Sure enough, Pete was busy in the garage with a bunch of new gadgets. It looks like he was getting a head start on the maker stuff. “Hey Pete, what’s going on?” I asked.

“Oh, hey JR. Check this stuff out. I bought a bunch of different 3D printers to try out and see which ones work best. I have thought of a name for the place too: ‘Make it Right’. What do you think?”

“I like it. Simple and to the point. So everything is set for the meeting? To tell you the truth, I’m ready to be done with this. I just want to have fun. Thank you so much for taking care of this crap.”

“This was your plan, remember? I’m happy to do most of the launch, but you need to be involved too.” He reminded me. “How about a trip to check out what some other places have done? There’s a place in Houston that opened last year. We can be back before dinner?”

“Let’s go!” Pete and I talked about several things on the drive down and back. About Sam’s milestone last night and Beth’s upcoming one. I honored Sam’s wishes, but I was sorry I would miss Pete’s reaction. I asked how it was going with Jess and Tyler.

“I know she’s thinking about it. Tyler is up for anything, it seems. My relationship with Beth doesn’t bother her at all because she’s lived it most of her life with Ken. Her own relationship with Beth is just kind of an extension of that. She knows what Beth is going through from her own experience. But her relationship with Tyler is different. It’s the reverse of what she knows and she hasn’t figured out how to deal with it. I think it is going to happen soon though.”

“Well, it’s the last piece of the puzzle. It’ll happen when it happens.”

“It isn’t the last piece, JR. Jess finally told me about Sam’s trick on the couch last week. I told her you and I had already talked about it. At first she was kind of pissed you had told me. Then she thought about it a little more and said in retrospect she should have known you would tell me. She knows you hate secrets. After thinking a little more she realized she would have been disappointed in you if you hadn’t said anything.”

“It really is the best way to live with people you love. A healthy relationship can handle almost anything if it is addressed early. The stuff that is allowed to fester and grow will cause much more harm when it is exposed later, as it almost always is.” I tried my best to live that way, but it wasn’t always easy. I’ve never regretted it though.

“Well Jesse took that to heart, I guess. She finally did tell me that she knew you had to be looking right at her ass that whole time and she admitted it turned her on.” That surprised me. “She did not expect to swallow your cock juice though. She said it turned her harmless flirting into something more serious and she didn’t know how she felt about it. She asked me what I thought and how I felt.” He said finally.

“And you told her what you told me?” I guessed.

“Yeah, pretty much. At first she was like you and wondered how I could feel that way. When I pointed out I have been doing it for over 12 years now she realized how alike the situations are. Jesse and you are not related, but you were as close as siblings once.” He said, somewhat reluctantly. “And you are growing close again. And I am okay with it JR. I really am.” He told me, looking me in the eye, off and on so he didn’t drive off the road and kill us.

“I don’t think I would believe that coming from anyone else. But you Pete, you are different.”

“I wouldn’t feel this way with anyone but you, JR. It’s who you are. You are the most honest person I have ever met. It’s the reason I have gone along with this whole crazy kid orgy we have going on at home. Sometimes I think I must be fucking insane. But it feels right, somehow.”

“It is kind of crazy, isn’t it? Sam has turned my entire world completely upside down. I wouldn’t have it any other way. I love that little girl so much.” I said.

“So how about adding a little more crazy?” Pete asked, cryptically. “It’s going to happen, JR. I can see it coming, and until it does our group is going to feel a little off, like something just doesn’t fit right.” He paused, working himself up to what I knew he was going to say. “I want you and Jesse to do it, JR. I want you to fuck

each other.” He let out a breath. “There, I said it. I wasn’t sure I could.”

“And I can’t believe you did! But now that you say it that way, I understand what you mean. It is kind of hanging in the air out there, isn’t it?” I admitted.

“Yeah. But don’t do it alone. It’ll be so much easier with Sam. You know how much she wants it to happen, right?” Pete said.

“Yeah, I know, and you’re right. She will definitely make it easier. What about Beth?” I asked.

“I don’t know. I think having her there at the start will just complicate things. Why don’t you do it the same time Beth and I try anal for the first time?” He suggested.

“That’s a great idea. But who’s going get Jess on board? Are you sure she wants this? I won’t do it if I think she isn’t completely sure it is a good thing to do.” I insisted.

“I’ll talk to her about it, but I can guarantee you she’ll be on board.” Pete declared. He was sure he knew, and I was pretty sure he was right. Pete and Jess know each other pretty well by this time. “Oh, I almost forgot.” He said as he exited the highway before we got to the exit for home. “I promised Beth I would pick her up a special toy at the store. She’s been asking for it for weeks.”

“What it is?” I asked. “I didn’t think she really played with toys anymore.”

“Oh, this isn’t a toy for kids!” he said as he pulled into the sex shop parking lot. “Do you think they have strap-ons in her size?” He said with a big grin on his face.



## Chapter 36: Sam and Jess Bend My World

I didn't tell Sam about Jess and me taking the next step. I figured it would be fun to surprise her. I love her reactions when she gets so super excited. They remind me that there is a kid under all of that sexual energy.

Sam and Beth slept in Sam's room that night. The rest of us were in our own beds. Sam told me to watch as they tried out the new toys we bought them earlier. I said I would but that it was a school night and they couldn't stay up all night fucking each other. Beth has been wanting to fuck Sam for a while so now that Sam was ready, Beth got to take her from behind. Beth didn't want to be on the receiving end yet even though the strap-on was small enough for her. She said she wanted to wait until after she did it with Pete. They were good and got to bed on time.

Later in the week Pete and I met with the Lawyers and we started the paperwork to found 'Make it Right'. Ken came into town a week and a half before his regular visit so he could sign the paperwork for his tiny share of control. He liked the idea of what we were doing and he was glad Pete was doing something he enjoyed instead of working a boring job just to make a few bucks. I offered Ken a job in the place but he declined. He said he was close to retirement at his current place and would prefer to just wait it out. He enjoyed his work. Travel didn't bother him since he didn't have any family besides Jess' family. I felt kind of bad for him but Jess said he did have a number of steady ladies he would see in the different cities he visited. He just never wanted to marry again. She thought he had never really gotten over her mom's death and he didn't want to replace her.

Ken and Jess spent the night together in their master bedroom. Pete slept with Tyler and Sam in her room and Beth slept with me. I'm not exactly sure why but I wanted to watch Jess and Ken together. Maybe because of my relationship with Sam. Ken said it would be okay. In fact he smiled and said I should pay close attention and I

might be able to learn a thing or two. Beth wanted to watch too. I actually did learn a couple of things that might serve me in later years when I can't quite match my younger self anymore.

The weekend finally arrived but we decided the big events would take place Saturday. We ordered dinner in and ate in the theater with a mini movie marathon Friday night. We watched all three Toy Story movies in a row. Sam slept with me, Beth with Tyler and Pete with Jess. Sam still didn't know Jess would be joining us Saturday in our bedroom when Pete and Beth were going to be together. I told her I didn't need to do anything that night and I just wanted to hold her close. She liked the idea and we fell asleep talking about the movies.

We had no outside plans made for Saturday and everyone just had a lazy morning in bed. Beth came to join Sam and me. Tyler climbed in bed with Pete and Jess. No one had sex, we just enjoyed a morning sleeping in and doing nothing. Beth wanted Sam to tell her again about her first anal time with me last Sunday. "Beth, don't think about what Sam did with me." I told her. "You and your father will have your own experience and it will be special and wonderful, in no small part because it will be yours, not a version of ours. Just remember how much Pete loves you and you will have a wonderful time."

"Thanks K-Bear." She told me when I finished. "I will try to just relax and enjoy it, remembering that I'm with daddy and he always takes care of me." I knew it would be great.

We all went over to the other house for a light lunch. Sam and Beth went off to Beth's room, to prepare I assume. "Hey Jess." I said, awkwardly.

"Hey Jon-Jon. Tyler is at a friend's and Pete and Beth are going to be alone, so I'm the odd girl out. How about I come down and watch with you?" she asked. We both knew what was supposed to happen. Pete said she didn't want to just schedule it like an

appointment in her calendar. I understood how she felt. I didn't like feeling forced either.

"Great idea, Jess. Sam will meet us down there." I told her, also trying to seem oblivious to what was really happening. "Hey Pete. Take good care of your little girl, you hear. I love my SweetB very much, you know."

"I know you do, JR. I would never let anything bad happen to her." He walked over to Jess, gave her a quick hug and a kiss. "I love you too, Jesse. You know that's why I'm okay with this, right? I know you will always love me, no matter what you do. And I will always love you as well." Another, longer kiss and after looking at each other for 10 seconds Pete slowly turned and headed into the bedroom.

"Come on, Jon-Jon." Jess said as she grabbed my hand and headed out the back door. I followed her out into the yard and then we just walked at a leisurely pace. "You know what the craziest part of this is to me?" she asked.

"No." I said simply, feeling kind of numb.

"The craziest part is that I don't know what I'm doing it for... but I know I should be doing it." She said, summing up my feelings perfectly.

"Yeah! That's how I feel too. I think it's important to do this, but I don't know why. It's like I'm a kid who doesn't want to eat his vegetables, or ..." I struggled to explain.

"Or a kid on the first day of school who is scared to go to and meet all of the other children." She added.

"Or a kid who doesn't want to do piano lessons but still wants to be Elton John." I finish as I look over at her. She begins to smile. I smile too. Before we even get to my back door we are both laughing.

“So we’re just a couple of wet-behind-the-ears kids who don’t know what’s good for them, huh?” She says going through the door as I hold it open.

“Yup. And Sam is the adult telling us to just do it, that we’ll enjoy it and feel better after.” I finished saying, completing the juxtaposition. “When we were younger we took sex out of the equation, set it aside so we could build our relationship without it getting between us. And we did build a very solid, dependable relationship that has lasted 15 years.”

“Now we are surrounded with sexual relationships that are working because of the solid relationships and love underneath.” She realized. “So maybe bringing sex back in won’t hurt our relationship... maybe it will enhance it like it has for the others.”

“I think we’ve just been so hung up on what was, on what he had in the past, that we couldn’t see the better things that might now be possible in the future.” I said as we entered my bedroom.

She stopped and turned to look at me. After about 10 seconds she reached up and grabbed my head, pulled it down, looked me in the eyes and said “Goodbye mostly harmless safe old college buddy.” and kissed my forehead. Then she looked me in the eyes again but something was changing. I don’t know how but she started to look sexier, more alluring. “Hello smoking hot sexy old college friend with benefits!” and kissed me deep on the mouth. It must have lasted over a minute. Easily better than any kiss I had ever had before I met Sam. She broke the kiss, let me go and jumped up in the bed. She just slid over, sat cross-legged, looked at me and tapped the bed next to me. “Come on. Sit down and we can talk some more while we wait for Sam.”

I couldn’t move. I just stood there. What happened to Jess? It was like a switch or something. She tapped the bed again and I regained control of my body. I walked over, climbed up next to her

one the bed and tried to pull my legs in under me like she did. She looked at me struggling and started to laugh.

“Okay. My next mission is to start a yoga class for everyone. Pete needs it too. I’ve always wanted to try naked yoga. I’ve heard such good things.” She said with a little giggle. “Turn on the screen. I don’t want to miss anything.”

I grabbed the controls and soon had their bedroom up on the screen. Pete was lying in bed with boxers and a tee-shirt on. He looked deep in thought. Just then we heard a knock and Beth came slowly into the room. She looked nervous. “Oh, my poor baby.” Jess said. “That does not look like someone who is ready to have their sewer pipe snaked.” I chuckled at that.

“Pete knows what to do.” As if on cue Pete hops out of bed, picks Beth up in a big hug and twirls her around. He starts dancing with her, like I have seen fathers do. Her feet were dangling and swinging back and forth. She was laughing and giggling. Just then our bedroom door opened and Sam strolled in.

“What’s happeni....” She started before seeing the two of us in bed and stopping in her tracks. “AJ!” she yelled and jumped up into bed to give Jess a huge hug. “This is the first time you’ve ever been in here, right?”

“Jess was in here before I was. She bought all of the furniture in the whole house. She was the designer.” I told Sam. I thought she had known.

“Oh. I didn’t know that. Well, okay.” She said. “But this is the first time since we all...”

“Started a bizarre incestuous child sex cult?” Jess finished, before starting to laugh.

“Hey!” I said. “I don’t think it is bizarre. Unorthodox, yes. Strange, maybe. Not bizarre.” We all started laughing then.

Sam turned around and sat between us. “So what’s happening over there?” she asked.

“Beth seemed really nervous when she came in.” Jess said. Pete’s being the great dad he is and playing with her so she forgets what was making her nervous. Oh, look. Now he’s pretending to eat her toes. He used to do that with the kids all the time when they were younger.” She smiled, thinking about her close, happy family.

“And now he’s moving up her leg.” Sam observed. “I think he’s going to be eating something else soon” she laughed as her hand went down and started to rub her pussy under her jeans. Jess and I looked at each other and nodded. We knew what to do next. Together we slowly striped off Sam’s clothes while kissing her all over. She started moaning and was intently watching the screen. “I like the team effort.” She said after we had her completely naked and each had one of her tiny titties in our mouths. “I could get used to this.”

I moved up and Jess moved down. We striped off our own clothes while kissing her and eating her out. “They’re starting!” Sam said, excitedly. Pete was behind Beth who was on all fours. He was eating her ass and her pussy, lubing up her ass. When we finished undressing Jess laid on her back and pulled Sam on top of her. They started munching each other. I went behind Sam and joined Jess. I alternated between her ass, her pussy and Jess’ mouth. Our tongues were very busy. We also spit on her ass and worked it in, lubing her up.

“Look, they’re going to do it.” Sam was really excited. Must watch TV I guess. Beth was still on all fours and Pete was behind her, rubbing his cock around her pussy and her ass. I stood up and started to do the same with Sam. “Oh yes, Daddy! Fuck me while Pepper fucks Sibs. This is perfect!” I had an extra hole to play with; Jess’ warm wet mouth. Pete was still now, just holding his cock out for

Beth. She was backing herself in, pushing harder and harder. I was very close but I couldn't match the timing exactly. I pushed into Sam about a half second after Beth pushed her way onto Pete's cock. I pulled out of Sam every once in a while so Jess could use her talented mouth to lube me up again.

Jess started to lick my balls as they swung back and forth in front of her. I stopped when I was balls deep in Sam so she could give them a proper tongue bath. Then I felt her hand grab my butt and start to spread my cheeks as her tongue started to work its way across my taint. I didn't know Jess did this. Ken and Pete were lucky bastards to have this surprisingly accomplished lover sharing their bed all of these years. I was very glad I had kept my asshole nice and clean. The sensations of Jess' tongue in my ass and Sam's ass on my cock was too much. "Oh God. Here it comes..." I yelled as I pulled out and started to stroke. Sam turned around so fast I'm surprised she didn't break anything. She brought her mouth down by Jess' and I shot my load into those two lovely mouths. They each swallowed their share and then licked each other's face clean. Then Sam used her hand to milk my last few drops into Jess' mouth.

Then I stepped back and leaned down to kiss them. We shared a three way kiss, sucking tongues and lips in an orgy of oral satisfaction. "I knew I could bring you guys together!" Sam said. "I could tell how much you loved each other. You just forgot how that love could grow into this and still keep you close." She finished before looking back at the screen. "Ah crap. We missed the ending." She said when she saw that Pete and Beth were now laying down and cuddling. "Instant replay?" she asked, reaching for the controls.

Jess and I laid next to each other while Sam fiddled with the controls. "Well?" she asked. "Was it worth the wait?" she joked.

"As long as I don't have to wait another 15 years! Actually..." I said as I my eyes worked down Jess' body and stopped at her beautifully trimmed bush. "I don't want to wait. It's been a long time

since my dick has been inside of a warm, juicy pussy. Are you up for round two? I asked.

“Really!” Sam said, jumping around to look at us. “Can we do it again now? Oh, please AJ. I can’t wait to see Daddy’s dick fuck your pussy? Can we? Please...” She was almost begging.

Jess started laughing. “Relax Sam! You had me at ‘round two’.” And smiled. Sam and Jess got back into a 69 position but with Jess on top. Jess grabbed a vibrator and went to work on Sam’s pussy while Sam started to suck my cock, bringing it back to life. She was jamming fingers into Jess at the same time. “Sam, keep going. Put another finger in. Ahhh, yes.” Jess said, enjoying Sam’s attention. “More Sam, more. Keep pushing. You can get your whole hand up there if you try. Oh yeah. That’s it. Fist me Sam. FIST ME!” she was yelling now.

“Wow!” Sam said, amazed as she pushed and pulled her hand that was jammed all the way into Jess. “How can she fit my whole hand in there Daddy?” I was stroking my dick as I watched my little girl fisting one of my oldest and dearest friends.

“Beth and Tyler both came out of there, Baby Girl.” I reminded her. “Your fist is a lot smaller than a baby’s head. I could probably fit my fist in there if I tried, but I think I’ll use this instead.” I said as I brought my dick up. Sam pulled her hand out and started rubbing Jess’ clit while I slid my cock into Jess’ juicy warm snatch. “Oh God, Jess. I didn’t know how much I have wanted this until now. I feel even closer to you now that I’m inside you.”

“Oh Jon-Jon! I feel so much closer to you also. Fuck me Jon, fuck me hard.” she cried. And so I did, increasing my pace. I heard the familiar slapping sounds of a man fucking a woman. Sam put her tongue out so my balls got a nice lick every stroke. Every now and then Jess’ pussy would queef and Sam would laugh. I don’t think she knew what it was. “Oh, I’m cumming Pete! Cum inside me. Fill me



with your forbidden seed!” That was what I needed. I started to cum, filling my old friend with my cum.

“Wow you guys!” Sam said. “That was awesome! I’m so happy I can share my Daddy with you, AJ. I’m disappointed I didn’t get to swallow his cum again.” she said, sadly.

“Don’t be Baby Girl. I hope you’re hungry because it’s time for your cream pie! Open wide.” I told her. I pulled my cock out of Jess and dribbled what was left inside of me into Sam’s mouth. She frowned, expecting more. “Don’t close your mouth yet. The best is yet to come.” Sure enough my pearly cock juiced started to ooze out of Jess’ twat and dribble into Sam’s waiting mouth. God Damn! It was a wonderful sight. I broke my gaze and went around to the other side. Jess was just smiling, enjoying the moment. “Still friends?” I asked.

“With benefits!” she said. “Pete will always be my partner and my true love. Dad has been my lover for so long, I don’t know what it would be like without him. But now you are in there as well, and it makes me happy. I’m looking forward to more Jon-Jon. I’m going to get to know to that cock of yours very well.”

“If you have an questions AJ, just ask. I know it better than anyone.” she said and we all laughed again. “And I loved my cream pie, Daddy. I have a new favorite dessert now!”

“Ready for a shower? Plenty of room.” I told them as I got up and walked to the bathroom.

“Now I know why you wanted the shower so big. Plenty of room for all of us.” Jess said as we soaped each other up. “In fact, I think there is room for at least one more!” she finished saying. I wondered whom she was thinking of adding but I didn’t ask. I like surprises too.

## Chapter 37: Tyler and Jess

Pete and Beth came over for dinner at our house that evening. Another cookout, some good Texas Barbecue. I thought it might be awkward seeing Pete for the first time after but he just walked up to me, gave me a hug and said “Welcome to the family, JR. And you too Els, of course.” I didn’t know what to say. I just stood there with a stupid look on my face. “Hell, you have been pretty much for the last few months, but I’m making it official.” he finished.

“Umm, that’s great Pete. Uhhh...” I said, trying to figure out what to say. “Don’t get me wrong, I’m excited as hell to hear it. Sam and I consider you guys all part of our family too.” Sam agreed, loudly and vehemently. “I’m just not sure what it means... and why make it official now?”

“Oh come on JR,” he said. “I can’t have Jess sleeping with someone who isn’t family.” he said with a straight face, and held it for about four seconds before the corners of his mouth started to come up. I was glad to not have to come up with a response to that statement. Jess started cracking up when Pete did and then we all lost it. “I’m sorry JR.” Pete said when we stopped. “Jess put me up to that. She wanted to see you face.”

“I put him up to that last comment, not the part about being part of the family. That we really mean, in our hearts.” she said, making sure I understood.

“Yeah!” Beth said, joining in. “Miss, you are my sister as far as we are concerned. I don’t care if the rest of the world doesn’t think so, we do, and that is what matters.” They hugged each other and started crying.

“So what does that make us?” I asked Pete and Jess.

“Brothers.” Pete said.

“And sister.” Jess said. “Our sibling relationship might be a little more intimate than most, but that’s how I’ll think of you, Brother.”

“We could always move to Alabama.” I said, making us all laugh again. “Well, we are happy to be officially part of the family. Now let’s all sit around the family table and eat. I’m starving.”

Sam and Beth stayed with me that night and Tyler came home to sleep with Jess and Pete. Before they headed out Jess told me to watch them tonight. She said she was going to tell Tyler he could do whatever he wanted, but she didn’t know what it would be.

“Are you ready to fuck me tonight, K-Bear?” Beth asked me as we were getting ready for bed.

“If you’re ready, yeah. I’d love to SweetB. You butt doesn’t hurt at all?” I asked to make sure. She shook her head. “Okay then. Do you want to wait until after we see what Tyler is going to do? Your mom said they might be doing something together.”

“Really! Oh, I want to watch that first.” she said, excited by the new development. And so we all laid in bed and watch some TV while we waited for them. It wasn’t long. Pete and Jess were in bed talking. After Tyler finished his bath he came running in naked and jumped up on the bed. First he told them about the sleepover birthday party he went to last night. His birthday was next month and he wanted to have it at a local kids fun zone place with laser tag, and indoor putt-putt and lots of other stuff that kids would like. After he was done he sat down between them and they all hugged.

“Tyler.” Jess started, broaching the subject. “Do you remember when you first stayed in here with Daddy, me and Sam?” He nodded. “I told you then that you should only play with Sam. Well, I have decided that it is okay if you want to play with me too. But only if you want to Tyler. You don’t have to do anything if you don’t want to.” she finished.

“Oh, it’s okay Mommy.” Tyler said, excited. “I want to. You look a lot different than Beth and Sam. I want to see what it’s like. Can I... can I kiss your boobies Mommy? They are bigger than Beth’s or Sam’s.”

“Okay sweetie. You used to love nursing. I never had to work hard with you. Go ahead.” she said as she leaned back and gave Tyler space to reach. Pete leaned over and started to kiss her as she started to stroke his dick.

“I like Mommy’s boobs too.” Beth said. “I hope mine get that big someday.” Jess’ breasts weren’t really that big. The were a nice C-cup. Fun to play with, but a tiny bit bigger than I prefer. What was great was her nipples. They were huge and got nice and hard with she was excited. They were getting hard now as Tyler was playing and sucking on them.

“I can’t wait either, Sibs. I’ll play with your titties all day.” Sam said as she reached over and started to play with them right now. Beth’s tits were growing as she was maturing. Jess had bought her a training bra, but she only every used it at school. “I wonder how big my boobs are going to be?” Sam said. “I think they are starting to grow.”

“Yes, they are. Both of you girls are entering puberty and your bodies are starting to change. Part of me will miss your sweet little girl bodies.” I said as I leaned over and started to run my hands all over Sam’s smooth skin. I wanted to lock my memories of it away so I could re-visit them in the future. “But another big part of me is looking forward to watching you develop and making love to you the entire way, experiencing every change along with you.” Everything changes, I reminded myself. Better to embrace it than to spend forever longing for a past that was gone and would never return.

Tyler had moved himself around so Jess could suck on his little dick while he continued to play with her tits. Pete had moved down

and was doing what he does best, eating pussy. I really should get some pointers from him, I reminded myself. Pete brought Jess to orgasm before he traded places with Tyler. Jess was now blowing Pete and stroking Tyler's dick while Tyler was investigating his mother's pussy, the same one that gave birth to him almost 8 years earlier.

I had Sam and Beth make me a little pussy sandwich while they watched the screen. I enjoyed the feeling of my dick between those two wonderful little twats. I realized that now I had two sweet assholes that were open for business very close. I could easily start moving from one to the other, but I was waiting to let Beth fuck me when she was ready.

"He's going to fuck her!" Sam said. Sure enough, Tyler had positioned himself between Jess' legs and was aiming his little dick for her wet, juicy pussy. He finally got it in and started to thrust in and out, fucking his mother for the first time. I doubt the physical sensation was much for Jess but the emotions must have been high. She was starting to tear up.

"That's it my special little boy. Fuck your mommy. Mommy wants to feel her little boy inside of her again." I hadn't thought of it that way. A mother fucking her son had an aspect that fathers could never understand. Pretty soon he started pumping faster and then suddenly he was done. He had his little orgasm and promptly pulled out again. Then he climbed up onto Jess and hugged her. "Finish what your little boy started, Pete." Jess told him. Pete moved down and started fucking Jess while she held Tyler close. It didn't take long for Pete to finish, filling Jess up. He got a towel to clean up and laid back down beside them. Tyler had already fallen asleep and soon they joined him.

"Wow, that was so special." Sam said. "I almost cried."

"Me too!" Beth said. "It was really neat and touching. I can't wait to join them."

“Well, tonight you are mine, SweetB.” I said as I laid down on my back with my dick pointing straight up in the air. “Care to do some bareback riding, little cowgirl?” I asked her. “Giddy-up!”

“That’s a great idea, K-Bear.” she said, remembering what we were going to do here. She stood up and walked over, standing astride me. She squatted down and positioned my cock at the entrance to her ass. I had lubed her up while she finished watching the show from the other house. She eased herself down and my cock popped into her tight little ass. “Oh yes. That feels so good inside of me.” She eased herself down slowly, but steadily. She did not go up and down, just slowly eased down. “How’s that, K-Bear? Does it feel good, your cock all the way into my ass.”

“It feels great SweetB. I am really going to enjoy this. Where do you want me to cum?” I asked, so I wouldn’t have to ruin the moment later.

“I want your cum inside of me.” she declared. “Then Sibs can use her tongue to get it out! Climb up and sit on K-Bear’s face, Sibs. Then kiss me!” Beth directed. She wasn’t wishy-washy now. She had taken control and we were happy to cede it.

Beth wasn’t just riding me, she was doing better. She was squatting and leaning forward to kiss Sam. She was moving her ass straight up and down, sliding almost the entire length of my cock. Just a steady stroking. Absolutely incredible. Almost too good, I was worried I was going to cum too soon. I reached down with my hand and grabbed the base of my cock, trying to delay. I used my other hand to start playing with her pussy, trying to get her to cum faster. I used every trick I had learned with my tongue to speed Sam along as well.

“Oh yes, K-Bear. That’s it. Oh don’t stop!” Beth said, getting very close. I could feel Sam getting close as well. I was going to make it, I thought. But right before Beth came I finally let go and started to fill up her butt. I thought I had cum too soon but I was

wrong. “Oh, I feel it. I feel you cumming..... Ahhh, yes, I’m cumming too.”

“Oh Sibs. I love you so much. I feel you, yes!” Sam said and Beth’s orgasm pushed her over the edge as well. What I thought would be a disappointment turned into an amazing three-way simultaneous release, or close enough. Absolutely wonderful. After we all caught our breath Sam moved on. “Okay Sibs. Time to share Daddy’s seed.” she said as she laid on her back and opened her mouth.

“Here it comes Miss, good to the last drop.” Beth said as she squatted over Sam’s mouth and my jizz streamed out. It was enough to make me hard again. After the stream stopped Sam put her hands up to spread Beth’s asshole and Beth squatted down more, settling on Sam’s tongue. She really was trying to get every last drop out. I stood up and put my dick in front of Beth’s face. She didn’t hesitate and sucked it all the way down her throat. She had learned to keep her tongue out to lick my balls at the same time, just like she had done with Tyler.

“Here’s a load for you SweetB. You are just fucking amazing! Both of your girls arrrree... Ahhh!” I said, before emptying my cock again. “Oh my God, girls!” I said after we had all settled down and were cuddling together. “You are absolutely amazing, both of you.” They smiled at each other and then leaned across me to kiss. “Each of you is amazing alone, but together. It’s like you feed off of each other. You don’t just add together, you become even more. It’s  $1 + 1 = 10$  with you two. I guess that means you’re binary!” I said, making a joke only Pete would understand.

“I hope that’s a good thing, Daddy.” Sam said, confused.

“It is. It is Baby Girl.” I said as we closed our eyes and drifted off to sleep.

## Chapter 38: Sam Knows Best

The next morning Tyler came over to see Layla and the puppies. He did every morning, actually. I felt bad that I had spent hardly any time with Layla lately. I went down to see her too. “I’m sorry I haven’t been spending time with you, girl.” I told Layla as I rubbed behind her ears. She didn’t seem resentful at all.

“Don’t worry, Uncle J. She understands.” Tyler said, beside me. He was holding one of the puppies. Patti, I think. She was his favorite. “She’s a mother now. She knows you need to spend time with your kids.” Smart little kid.

“But Layla is one of my kids, Tyler.” I explained. “She is my first kid. She taught me how to be a father.” And she had, in a way. I got Layla when she was a little puppy, just after she had been weened. Little puppies are not easy to raise. They require a lot of attention to do it right. I had to get up every few hours to take her out if I wanted her to be properly housebroken. But we grew together and formed a bond that amazes me still.

“Well,” Tyler said, putting Patti down gently. “She did a really good job teaching you, Uncle J.” he said before coming over and giving me a big hug. It surprised me, and made me feel really good. I had never done much with Tyler. I was always spending time with the girls. Pete was good with Tyler and spent a lot of time with him. I resolved to spend more time with him too. “Okay Layla, come on. Time to go for a walk.” Layla extracted herself from the puppies and headed out the door with Tyler.

“You really are a good father, Daddy.” Sam said behind me. I turned around and she came up and gave me a big hug. “I mean it. You are the perfect Daddy for me. Now come on, you’re taking me to the store.” she said, grabbing my hand and dragging my upstairs.



“I hope you weren’t just buttering me up down there.” I joked. “I did promise you some new Spring outfits, didn’t I? Is Beth coming too? My treat.” Beth did come. They dragged me all over the mall and I bought them a lot of clothes. Worth every cent.

I took everyone out for dinner that night. Sam and I had a craving for seafood. It wasn’t nearly as good as the places by the coast, but we didn’t have a lot of choice. I decided I definitely wanted to do some more traveling. We talked about it over dinner and came up with a few places we all wanted to go. I decided to look for a really big RV that could sleep all of us and pull an SUV that we could all fit in. It would be nicer to travel together when we were going to the same place.

That night Sam was with me, Tyler and Beth were together and Pete and Jess. “I want you to fuck me like this tonight Daddy.” Sam said next to me. She was just lying on her back with her legs spread.

“Plain old missionary?” I asked. “Okay, if you want. You don’t normally go for that, but I guess that does make it different by default.” I laid down below her and started started by licking her toes. “I’m not going make it boring though. I’m going to add some spice for flavor.” I kissed and licked my way up one leg, then the other. Finally I started on her little pussy. I couldn’t help but be amazed at how beautiful it was. Just a perfect shaped pussy for a perfect girl. I used my tongue and spit to lube up her ass and then I kissed my way up to her face and gave her a big deep kiss as I started to position my dick at her asshole.

“No Daddy.” she said after breaking our kiss. “Not that hole. I’m ready and I want you to fuck me for real tonight. Make me a woman, Daddy.”

Wow. This is sure a pleasant surprise I thought. “Okay Baby Girl, let me lay on...”

“No.” she said again, surprising me. “I want you to fuck me like this. I want you in control. I want you to take my cherry.”

“I can’t, Baby Girl. You know that.” I reminded her. The memory of the last time I did that still haunted me.

“Yes you can, and you will.” she told me. “You are not the 17 year old inexperienced high school kid anymore. You are a loving, gentle lover who knows how to not hurt a girl. I don’t want you to do this for me. You need to do this for you.” Jesus Christ. How did she do that. So young, but still so wise. I knew she was right. That memory was hanging over me and I had to move past it. She was using her first time to help me. I couldn’t deny her that. I had to do it.

“Okay my sweet little Baby Girl. Just tell me right away if anything hurts, okay?” She nodded. I moved my dick up and started to rub the head all over her vulva. She was already very aroused. I positioned it at the opening and slowly pushed in. I glanced up and the look I got was the most amazing combination of trepidation, pleasure and love. I could see in her face how much she loved me and how much she wanted ME to enjoy this.

I knew she had prepared, that she would not have any tearing. She was so wet I knew I would slide right in if I pressed. I knew everything was right and she was completely ready. Why was I hesitating? I knew it was the time. Just then she put her arms down to push herself up to kiss me. “I’m ready, Daddy.” she said softly to me after the kiss, her face inches from mine and her beautiful eyes looking deep into my soul. “I want to feel you inside of me.”

That did it. My fear and anxiety were banished. My Baby Girl believed in me. She was waiting for me to treat her right and give her what she desired. I pushed in slowly as I leaned my head down to continue to kiss her. I felt the warmth and wetness of her pussy surrounding and engulfing my dick, like a welcoming hug. Through her kiss I could feel her body begin to relax. She knew I had done it.

I had faced the demon of my past and vanquished it. Pleasure took her over and she reached her hands up and wrapped them around me.

Soon I felt some resistance. I had reached her cervix, but I was almost completely buried. She was able to take it most of it in and I knew fucking this little girl was going to be the greatest experience of my life. I started to slowly pull out but she quickly wrapped her legs around me and held me in. “Not yet Daddy.” she said. “You are inside my pussy for the first time and I want to feel it for a little longer. I have waited for this so long. I have loved you so long. Finally you are deep inside of me and I want to savor it.”

“Then enjoy it Baby Girl. I have wanted this for so long as well. Since that walk on the beach when you helped me realize that we could love each other this much.” I confessed. “I would do anything for you, Sam. You are everything to me. I love you so much.”

“And I love you too, Daddy... so, so much.” she said and released her legs. “Now fuck me Daddy. Fuck your little girl and fill her pussy with your cum!” And I did. I slowly pulled out and thrust back in. Then again a little faster. Then faster still. Soon I was pumping deep full strokes into this little girl lying below me. She was moaning in ecstasy. “Yes, yes, yes! Oh Daddy! This feels soooooo good. Oh! I’m gonna cum Daddy. Cum with me Daddy. Oh. I’m cummmmming!” she screamed. I had never felt her shake and move like this before. She was being consumed by a powerful orgasm. The incredible massage her vagina was giving my cock was more than enough to push me over the edge.

“Oh God! Yes Baby Girl. I’m cumming. I’m filling you up with my seed!” I gasped as my cock erupted in a emanation of jizz, filling her tight little pussy up. Again and again I pulled out a couple of inches and thrust back in, spurting more and more inside of her. It seemed to go on forever. Soon our strength was gone and I collapsed on top of her, careful to not crush her little body. We found each other’s mouth and started kissing, our breath loud and fast in our nostrils. We just laid there for what must have been 10 minutes.

Finally she looked me in the eyes and said “I told you that you would do it right. You were perfect for me Daddy. You joined me and carried me in with you, together. You didn’t push me in or pull me through. You were the perfect person to make me into a woman. And I am yours.” She reached up and hugged me yet again. I started to cry. She had done it. She had helped me overcome something I didn’t even know I was fighting.

“Let’s go shower.” I said as I climbed out of bed still holding her against me, my cock still inside of her. “If I pop this cork out it is going to be messy. I know I pumped a lot into you.” She turned on the shower as both of my hands were under her cute little ass, holding her in tight. When it got up to temperature I walked us under the warm stream as it rained down onto us. We kissed yet again, the water cascading down our faces.

I pulled myself out of her and set her down on her feet again. We broke our kiss and I straightened back up to reach for the soap. Before I could turn around she grabbed me in a hug and buried her head in my dripping wet chest. “I love you Daddy.” she said simply before letting me go and turning to get the shampoo. I loved this little girl so much my chest ached. Nothing else mattered but her.

## Chapter 39: One... two... Three... Four!... FIVE!

The next week was uneventful. The kids went to school. Pete and I worked on Make it Right, which we began calling MiR for short. Layla took care of her puppies. And Jess kept us all in line. She ran the place, and she ran it well. Ken was coming into town on Friday for his regular visit. A lot has changed since he was last here. I wondered what he was going to make of it all.

Pete and I had hired a general manager for MiR. Alice Hawthorne had worked with Pete at Dell. She had been the manager of one of the other sections in his division and he knew she was good at her job. She jumped at the offer to get out of there. She was sick of the place, like Pete. A university on the West coast just built a new engineering building was auctioning off all of the lab equipment from their old one. Most of it was in very good condition, some of it almost brand new. Alice was going to fly out Friday to see what she could get at the auction.

Friday night we decided to skip the movie and turn in early. Tyler was sleeping overnight at a friend's house. Sam and Beth were in Sam's room. Pete was on his own in their guestroom, since Jess and Ken usually took the master. And I was alone in my room for the night. It had been a while since I was alone for the night and part of me was a little lonely but I was also going to enjoy the solitude. Sam told me to watch her and Beth. She said they were going to try something new.

### Part One: Solo

So I climbed into bed, propped myself up on some pillows, turned on the TV and grabbed my dick. Ahhh, reminds me of the old days, I told myself. Sam and Beth were getting undressed. Sam jumped in bed, looked up at the camera and blew me a kiss. I didn't feel nearly as creepy that way. Then Beth strapped on one of the new

toys Pete had bought her and I knew why Sam invited me to watch. It was their first time using them.

I thought about it and realized that a woman strapping on a dildo was pretty much just a game of make believe. And that is how it looked. As soon as Beth put it on she pretended she was a man. She imitated all of the things she has seen us do. She waggled it around, stroked it. She brought it up to Sam's mouth so she could suck on it. It was a turn on to watch her do all of this and I started to stroke my dick. Beth laid on her back and Sam climbed on top. Beth was eating out Sam while she was sucking on Beth's 'rubber dicky', as she called it. She also stuck her fingers into Beth's pussy and ass.

After a couple of minutes Sam got up and turned around. She eased her pussy down onto Beth's dildo and leaned down to kiss her. Then she started moving forward and back. God in heaven I wished it was my dick instead of that dildo. Then I remembered it was my dick last night, and I didn't feel so bad. Sam raised herself up a little so Beth could thrust it in and out from below. She did this for a while and then Sam moved. Eventually they figured out how to sync up.

After a few minutes of that Sam got off and turned around to reverse cowgirl. This time she settled down with the dildo in her ass. Then she started to do her best twerking. It was fun to watch. I was close to cumming but I backed off. I wanted it to last since I figured there would be more later. Turned out I was wrong. After a few minutes Sam got up and laid down next to Beth. They talked quietly for a little bit. Then they kissed and got up out of bed. Beth took off the strap-on and started to get dressed. I didn't know what was going on. They hugged and then Sam headed for the door.

## Part Two: Duet

Three seconds later my bedroom door open and a naked Sam walked in and jumped up in bed beside me. "Well?" she asked me. "Did you like it?"

“Yeah I liked it.” I told her. “It was fun to watch. I love the way Beth was strutting around like a little guy swinging a big dick.”

“She said she liked it. We have been wanting to try them since you got them last weekend but never got to them. We realized that you and Pepper were going to be along tonight so we figured we’d try it out quick to give you guys a little show and then come surprise you.”

“Well, I’m glad you’re here. I’m sure Pete is happy Beth is there too. And you made it before I came.”

“Yeah. I know there is a limited supply and I don’t want to waste it!” she laughed. “Okay, so what do you want to do? Did you like the cowgirl? Reverse cowgirl?”

“Let’s do the reverse cowgirl, but I want to fuck your pussy. I liked your twerking moves. I want to see some of those up close.”

“Then get your love lance ready for the ride of a lifetime little horsey. Giddy-up” she cried as she stood up and turned around. She started by doing a little dance, gyrating her hips around. Then she leaned all the way down and sucked on my dick a little while waving her ass back and forth. Then she reached back and spread her ass and pussy wide open and bounced it up and down right in front of my face. Oh my God! The Rolling Stones were talking about Sam. She could make a dead man cum! I was hard as iron and she was still wet. She finally lowered herself down and rubbed my cock all around her wet vulva. Then she slid down onto me.

“Oh God Baby Girl! You are so absolutely amazing! This is where my dick belongs! I wish it could be deep inside of you forever.”

“Oh Daddy. Yes, YES! Me too. I love feeling your man meat inside of me. Now stay still and let me work. I’m gonna rock your world!” And rock it she did. She found ways of moving I didn’t think

were possible. Up & Down. Left & Right. In & Out. Swirling round and round. Slow. Fast. Anything and everything, she tried it. She didn't let me cum yet though. Every time I got close she stopped and said "Not yet!"

After the third time I said "When? Baby Girl. I feel like a dam that is about to bu-" Knock. Knock. Knock. "Really? Now?" I said quietly. "Come in, I guess." I said louder.

### Part Three: Trio

"I'm sorry, K-Bear." Beth said, peeking around the door. "I didn't know what else to do." She looked like she was in trouble.

"It's okay Sibs." Sam said, before I could. She was just sitting there now since she was trying to keep me from cumming. Beth's arrival in just made that easier. "What's up? Why aren't you with Pepper?"

"Daddy told me to come over here because he had to leave." I looked at her quizzically. "Oh, it's nothing really bad... well, I guess it kind of is... but not for Daddy." She wasn't making a lot of sense. I was losing the pressure to nut, which was actually a bit of a relief since Sam wasn't letting me anyway,

"Beth." I said simply so she stopped rambling. "Take a breath. Take another. Okay, now slowly tell me what Pete asked you to tell me."

"Daddy said to tell you that Alice's brother was in a bad motorcycle accident and that she was going to fly to Seattle. Then he said he was going to head right to the airport and fly out on the first plane he could so he could get to the action tomorrow. What does that mean? What kind of action." She asked, confused.



“Auction, not action. Never mind. What’s important is that I have a face without a pussy on it and you have a pussy without a face in it. Any idea how we can solve those problems?”

“I have one idea, K-Bear!” she said as she quickly striped off her clothes and climbed up on top of me. Sam turned around to regular cowgirl so she and Beth could make out. Sam got back to gyrating and grinding on me, but she still wouldn’t let me cum. “Why do you keep stopping while you are riding him, Miss?” Beth finally asked her.

“Because I’m not letting him cum yet. I want to see how long I can make it last.” She said. “Do you want to try?”

“Oh yeah! My turn.” Beth said as they switched places. Beth slid her oh so sweet little brown knothole of love down my cock and started doing her best to get me close, but not quite there. They seemed to be enjoying it, thinking they were frustrating me. I think they thought they had invented this technique. I was going to wait until after to tell them about delaying orgasms and tantric sex. They were in the middle of changing positions again when the phone rang.

#### Part Four: Quartet

“Jon? Did I interrupt you? Are you busy?” Jess asked when I picked it up.

“Busy getting tortured by Sam and your daughter.” I said, laughing.

“Oh. Ahhh. Well listen, can Tyler come join you? He had to come home early because his friend’s brother got sick and they took him to the hospital. He’ll be okay though. Anyway, Dad’s plane is going to land in less than an hour and I need to leave to pick him up.”

“Sure. Send him over. I wonder if they’ll torture him too.” I mused and hung up. “Well, make room girls. Tyler is on his way.”

“Cool!” Sam said. “We’ve never had a four-way with Daddy and Tyler, Sibs.”

“Yeah, that’s right. But we are not going to torture him, K-Bear. That’s just for you.” She said and stuck out her tongue at me. She was right in front of my face at the time so I leaned forward and started sucking on her tongue. She didn’t pull away and it turned into a kiss. Sam brought her lips up to join us and we shared a sloppy, wet three-way kiss for a few minutes until Tyler knocked on the door. “Come in, Ty.” Beth said. “Eat your big sister’s pussy!”

Beth moved down and started sucking on my dick while Sam kept kissing me. I was playing with Sam’s pussy and ass, introducing her to the “Shocker”, which didn’t really shock her. That didn’t surprise me. Tyler followed his big sister’s instructions and crawled up onto the bed so he could start to munch her glorious little slit. Sam broke our kiss and crawled down to Tyler, undressing him. She put her pussy in front of my face, so I started to eat it. As soon as Sam had Tyler naked she start to suck his little dick too. We made a nice little oral sex square. Well, more like a trapezoid since Tyler was shorter than me. After about 5 minutes I decided I wanted a change of scenery. “Okay. Everyone swap!” We all switched ends so I was eating Beth who was sucking Tyler who was eating Sam who was sucking me.

“Hey. Stop everyone.” Sam said after another 10 minutes. “I have an idea! I want two dicks in me!” She got up and climbed back on top of me, cowgirl style. She reached back and positioned my dick before easing back onto it. “There. Now Tyger, come fuck your Sammy’s ass!” I guess I can add Tyger and Sammy to the list of pet names. Tyler didn’t need to be told twice. He got up behind her and got his dick inside her. We couldn’t move a lot or he would slide out so Sam just slid back and forth slowly. Beth was watching so Sam told her “Go lick Tyger’s asshole, Sibs!”

“Ew! No way!” Beth said. “He doesn’t keep it clean and the last time it tasted like shit!”

“I’m sorry Sis!” Tyler said. “I cleaned it this time. Promise!” he said.

“Okay Ty. But if it isn’t then I’m never going to eat your ass again. You’ll have to get Layla to do it.” She went to investigate and I guess it was clean because Tyler was starting to moan. Sam and I were kissing deeply. I loved to explore her mouth with my tongue. Then she broke the kiss, pulled her head back a little and looked me in the eyes.

“I love you Daddy. And I love being able to do this with you. I’m not trying to torture you. It doesn’t hurt or anything does it?” She was actually looking a little concerned.

“No.” I smiled. “It doesn’t hurt. I know it isn’t torture, I am teasing you. In fact it feels kind -“ Knock. Knock. Knock. “Oh Jesus Butt-Fucking Christ!” I said quietly, getting a snort out of Sam. Everyone had stopped. “Who is it?” I asked, not sure what could be going on.

#### Part Five: Quintet

The door opened and Jess stuck her head around the door. “Well, look at that.” She said when she spied Beth licking Tyler’s ass. “I should get my camera and that could be our next Christmas card!” she laughed.

“Jess, why are you here? Where’s Ken?” I asked, confused.

“His plane got diverted and he won’t be here until morning. I thought I’d come and join in the fun. Is that okay?”

“It sure is, AJ.” Sam was the first to say. “Get out of those clothes and climb up on Daddy so I can eat your ass!” Ten seconds later Jess’ sweet muff was in my face and Sam’s tongue was in her ass. I realized this night had ended in my first four-way and my first five-

way, although I never planned to include an 8-ish year old boy. I knew right then how I wanted it to end.

About 5 minutes later Sam took the lead again. “Okay. Now you get to fuck AJ, Daddy. What hole do you want him in, AJ?”

“I want that dick of yours to finish the job your tongue started, Jon-Jon. Ready?”

“Get ready to blast off Jess, the countdown is about to start.” I say as I get her to kneel in front of me. Tyler laid down in front of Jess so she could suck his dick. Sam and Beth got on either side of Jess and spread her wide open for me. I slid my cock into her full-grown pussy and started to pound away. The girls took turns kissing me, sucking my nipples or licking Jess’ asshole. I had one hand behind each of the girls, fingering their little pussies and they came pretty quickly. Jess finished off Tyler soon after. Then I felt Jess cum. I stopped pumping and pulled back out. “Okay, can I finally finish this off, Baby Girl?” I asked her as I wagged my dick around. “I started back when I was watching you and Sweet-B and it feels like it may explode.”

“Cool!” both girls said. “How do you want to finish, Daddy?” Sam asked.

“I’ve always wanted a nice three-way blow job. Then I’ll finish into all three of your mouths.” I arranged them with Sam on the left, Jess straight ahead and Beth on the right. I just looked down at those three beautiful sets of lips passing my cock back and forth. Three equally beautiful sets of eyes were gazing up lustfully at me. Tyler was just going back and forth from pussy to pussy, sticking his dick in for a few pumps before moving on. He started trying to fuck whichever one was sucking on my dick at the time. They all made a game of it.

“Okay, now let me fuck Jess’ face while you girls just sandwich my dick from the sides with your lips. Oh, yeah!” I was thrusting in

and out of Jess' mouth with the wonderful feeling of the girls' lips and tongues adding to it. "Here it comes!" I said as I pulled out and started to shoot my load into three open mouths, aiming back and forth, hitting tongues that were wagging back and forth. It was a massive orgasm; it had been building for hours. Each mouth got almost a normal load. When I finished they brought their mouths together and re-distributed it with their tongues, finally swallowing and licking each other clean.

I collapsed on the bed, almost exhausted. The girls piled on top of me and Jess laid down lower, her head on my belly, one boob on my cock. Tyler climbed on top of his mom and pretended to collapse too, but I knew he wasn't tired. "That was awesome!" I said. "My first five-some."

"Mine too!" they all said at almost the same time. We laughed and realized that it was true. Tyler and both girls had never been with Pete and Jess at the same time. One of the girls was always with me since they didn't want me to be alone. It only happened this time because Pete was out of town.

"Well I guess I'll have to take a trip out of town so Pete can get his." I said and laughed. "For now, shall we see if that shower can really fit all of us?" It was a tight fit, but it did work. We all showered together and spent the night all together in one king sized bed. That was tight too.

## Chapter 40: Rescue

Tyler went back to his sleepover the next morning. Jess picked up Ken from his delayed flight and they spent the day together. I had both girls for the rest of the weekend, which was as wonderful as it sounds. Beth told me that she was ready for Pete to take her cherry and that she was going to do it Saturday but then he had to leave. I told her not to tell him and to do it next weekend.

At lunchtime Ken was amazed at all of the stories from the last month. We showed him the videos of Sam seducing Pete and he got a big blast out of them. He was going to have to leave before Pete got home Sunday night. I decided to talk to Pete and Jess about Ken visiting more often if he wanted to. Especially if he was going to get introduced to Sam and Beth as I believed. It didn't seem fair to limit him so much now that everything was out in the open. It was their decision, of course.

The auction went well and we got such a good deal that we bought more than we could use at the moment. We knew we would be able to use it later when we expanded. Alice's brother was going to be okay, thanks to the amazing things trauma surgeons can do these days. 30 years ago he'd have been DOA. 15 years ago he'd have been paralyzed or had his leg amputated. Today he was probably going to be able to recover with no lasting ill effects. It brought back memories of my own accident, though mine wasn't nearly as bad.

Late Monday morning Pete and I were going over the list of items from the auction when I got a call from Sam at school. "Daddy! I need you to do something. I need you to help Ruthie's mommy." She told me, very excitedly.

"Hold on Baby Girl. Calm down. Who is Ruthie?" I asked her.

"She's a friend here at school. She's in Tyler's class and her mommy is in trouble."

Just then Jess came into the room with her phone in her hand. “Jon. I’ve got Tyler on the phone and he says something about you helping his friend’s mom. Do you know anything about this?”

At this point Pete’s phone rang with a call from Beth. The three of us got the kids to calm down and we got the story straight. Tyler had a girl in his class named Ruth and all of the kids liked her. Jess knew her mother, Robyn. Ruth told Tyler that something seemed wrong when her mom had dropped her off at school that morning. Her mom told her that if she didn’t pick her up from school later to not go back home. Ruth was worried and tried to call her mom after recess but that her mom didn’t answer. Ruth wanted someone to see if her mommy was okay. All of the kids were worried so I said I would go.

Ruth said that her mom had told her to go to her uncle Jimmy’s place if there was something wrong at home and that I should go there first. She gave me the address. She said to tell her mommy that stinky ears says I’m okay. I didn’t know what that meant but I said okay.

The address for uncle Jimmy was in a part of town I don’t go to. I’m generally not scared of much, but this part of town did scare me. The address was for an apartment in the back of what used to be a large house. It looks like it had been divided into 4 places. I knocked on the door. I thought I heard something but after I got no response I knocked again. I heard someone approach the door on the other side and look through the peephole. A deadbolt got retracted and the door opened a little, but there was still a chain. “Who... Who are you?” a frightened voice said.

“I’m JR. Ruth sent me. Are you Robyn?”

“Hold on.” The voice said and the door shut. The chain was removed and the door opened. “Come in, quick.” I quickly went in and I heard the door shut behind me. I turned around to see a petite

young woman in her late teens or early twenties holding a knife, but she didn't look she knew how to use it. "You said Ruth sent you? How do I know that? How do you know Ruth? Is she okay?" She sounded really worried at the last part.

"Yes, Ruth sent me through my daughter and her friends." I said, ignoring the knife. "She said stinky ears says I'm okay, whatever that means. And she was okay as of 10:30 this morning."

"Stinky ears!" she said, suddenly happy. "Oh thank God, she's okay." She dropped the knife can came over to hug me. I hugged her back, reflexively. She was only about 5' 3" tall. She was mixed-race, but very light skinned. She had drop-dead gorgeous green eyes. She looked a lot like [url=https://www.google.com/search?q=rihanna+2008]Rihanna[/url]. "So who is your daughter and who are her friends? Who are you?" she asked, finally.

"My daughter is Samantha, her friend is Beth and Beth's younger brother Tyler is in Ruth's class." I said, summarizing what I knew.

"So you know Tyler's mom, Jesse?" I nodded. "Oh thank Jesus! I need your help. You have to help me get Ruth before they get her." She said, desperately.

"Before who gets her?" She sounded paranoid, and afraid. That didn't mean she was wrong though.

"Okay, I know this is going to sound crazy, but it is the truth. There are people trying to kill me and Ruth. I'm not going to try and explain it all. The first thing we have to do is to get Ruth somewhere safe." She was desperate, but determined. She sure sounded like a mother, concerned with her child's welfare above all else. I decided to call Jess and see what she knew.

"If they are watching Ruth we have to find a way to get her out of the school safely without anyone knowing. Let me see if Jess has any ideas." I told her as I pulled out my phone. I used the secure VOIP



dialer through a VPN that I had set up for us. I didn't want big brother or anyone else to listen in on our conversations involving the kids. You never knew what kinds of information could get out. It rang and Jess picked up. I explained everything to Jess with some help from Robyn.

"I have an idea." Jess said. "I know the principal at the school. She is an old friend and she will help, no questions asked. I'll call you back. Head to the school."

I explained to Robyn and she was overjoyed. "Oh thank you, THANK YOU!" she said, giving me a hug and a big kiss on the lips. It was a nice kiss. Her lips were very soft and I had to push it out of my mind to focus. "Okay, you go to the car first and I'll follow behind you barking orders. Anyone who sees will not intervene if they think I am running the show. If they think I'm in trouble they might want to do something stupid. I promise I won't boss you around after this. It is just for show." It made sense and we got into the car and drove off without incident.

"Okay, do you think you can explain a little more on the way. I'm very confused." Robyn explained and it was quite an amazing tale. Ruth was 7 year old and would be 8 very soon. She actually had the same birthday as Tyler which is why they had become such good friends at school. Robyn herself was only 23 years old. She had Ruth when she was 15. She had been kind of a wild child and when she was 14 she ended up at a party with some influential white politicians and business leaders in the community. She had gotten pregnant by a newly-elected state senator by the name of Dan Van Maarten with political ambitions and the money to make it happen.

Senator Van Vaarten had tried to force her to get an abortion but when she threatened to go public he agreed to pay her \$50,000 and all of her medical expenses to keep quiet and go away. She took the deal since at the time \$50K seemed like a fortune. Of course it wasn't but she kept her end of the bargain and never contacted him again. She vowed to do whatever she could to raise Ruth right. When the money

ran out she became a dancer at a strip club when she was 19, but never took money for sex. She got Ruth enrolled at the school through a scholarship and everything was going well.

Everything changed yesterday, as she learned this morning. A friend of hers had some dealings with the more unsavory lot and got word last night that Robyn's name was mentioned by some lowlifes he knew. This morning he found out that a contract had been put of for Robyn and Ruth. Apparently Senator Van Maarten was going to be moving up in the political world and had decided to clean up his past.

I had no reason to doubt her so I assumed she was telling the truth. Jess called me back finally when we were about half way to the school. "Oh Jon, here's the deal. The Principal has called Ruth to her office, quietly. She got a football outfit including helmet and she is going to dress Ruth up in it. You are going to go into the school and pick her up as if you are getting your son. Her hair will be up in the helmet and with her face covered nobody should have any reason to think she is even a girl. Your pickup truck will help sell it since that's what most football dads would be driving around here."

"Thanks Jess. You're a life-saver. Literally. I'll let you know when we've got her. Thank your friend." I explained it all to Robyn and she agreed it was a good plan. "You need to keep down so no one can see you, okay. That's very important. Get in the back so you can be with Ruth when I get her."

I pulled up in front of the school and just left the truck running out front, like I owned the place. I went in and met Principal Evans down the hall. "You're here for Jason, Mr. Parker? Here he is, all ready to go." she said, as if everything was normal.

"Thank you very much Principal Evans. You've been a lot of help." She left Ruth with me and walked away. No one was around so I talked to Ruth quietly. "Ruth. I'm JR, Sam's Dad. You mommy is outside but before we can go out I need you to do some pretending with me, okay?" She nodded. "Okay, I want you to pretend you are

my son, Jason. I need you to pretend like you're a tough football player, okay. I'm going to hit your shoulder pads like this and grunt. Then you jump up and grunt too. Then pump your fist in the air. Let's practice. Ready?" She nodded again. She did what I asked, just right. It looked like this might work.

We walked out the building and I was giving 'Jason' a big pep talk. About halfway to the truck I stopped and hit the shoulder pads like we practiced. She jumped, grunted and pumped just like she practiced and we continued to the car. On the way I noticed there was an SUV parked across the street and I thought I saw the driver had binoculars. This was real! I opened the back door of the truck and lifted Ruth in, then put the seat-belt on. I had to make sure she didn't get too excited when she saw Robyn. I closed the door, climbed up in the driver's seat and drove off, right by the SUV as if they weren't even there. The guy just ignored us and kept watching the school. We had done it!

"Okay, we made it!" I told them and they started celebrating. Robyn got up to sit in the seat next to Ruth and hugged her like she hadn't seen her in years. It was touching. "Now what? I asked."

"Now we get as far away from this fucking asshole as we can! Where can we go to lay low?"

"Let's head to Arkansas. We can rent a fishing cabin out in the woods and disappear." I suggested as I turned onto the highway going North.

## Chapter 41: Laying Low

We stopped for the night at a Motel outside of Dallas. “Okay, let me drop you off at the Motel so you can go from the car right into the room. No one should see you. Then I’ll go out and get some supplies.”

“No way!” Robyn said. “No way in hell you’re leaving us now. We go where you go.” She was scared, as anyone would be in that situation.

So I paid for the room at the front desk and we all went right in. “I’ll order dinner. Pizza okay?” I took the silence as assent. After I ordered I figured it was time to plan. Ruth was still in the football uniform. “I was going to get some clothes but that will wait until tomorrow I guess. I need to buy a new laptop too. And some untraceable cell phones for you. You can’t contact anyone you know if you don’t want to be traced, okay?”

“Okay.” Robyn said. She was in a daze. She was sitting on the bed farthest from the door with Ruth in her lap. I walked over and sat down next to her. She turned to look up into my eyes. Her eyes were wet and I could tell she was just barely holding it together. I opened my arms and she dove in, burying her face in my chest and started to cry. I just let her cry for about 10 minutes, holding her gently and trying to comfort her. Finally she cried herself out. “I don’t know what would have done without you.” she said before turning to look up at me again. “Why are you doing this?” She didn’t sound suspicious. I think she assumed I wanted something out of it and was wondering what. I got the feeling that was just the way things were for her.

“I’m doing it because you need help and because I can. Not everyone in this world thinks only about themselves, you know.” That did make her look suspicious. “You don’t have to believe me. You just need to be safe and look after Ruth.” Ruth was asleep in her lap.

There was a knock at the door and she jumped, fear in her eyes. “Relax. It’s just the pizza.” I extracted myself and went to pay for the pizza. When I turned around I saw that she had hid in the bathroom with Ruth. “It’s safe to come out. Who’s hungry?” They both came running out. Everyone was hungry. We found a movie on the TV and ate our pizza. I had already called Jess when we left the school. I called her again with an update. Sam was worried so I called her next.

“Daddy? Is that you!” I had done a video call and we could see each other. “Is everyone okay? How is Ruth?” I could hear Beth and Tyler in the background, also worried.

“Here. You can ask her yourself.” I said as I handed the phone to Ruth. They all talked excitedly about the adventure.

“You guys really love each other, don’t you. I can tell.” Robyn said after I gave the phone away.

“I love her more than anything in the universe. She is everything to me and I would do anything for her. Anything.” I confirmed. “I think you feel the same about Ruth. That’s a big part of the reason I am helping you. I can’t explain fully now but Sam was in a similar situation last year, though not as deadly.”

“I look forward to hearing that story. At the moment I am beat and ready for bed. I’m afraid I don’t have any bed clothes though.” She wasn’t kidding. She was in a short skirt that looked very nice on her, but wasn’t built for sleeping.

I was only wearing a tee shirt but I pulled it off and gave it to her. She didn’t flinch, though I did catch her checking me out before she looked at the shirt. “Best I can do. That football jersey might actually work better.”

“No, I think this will work. It’s longer.” she said, getting up. “Come on, Ruth, let’s get ready for bed.” Ruth said goodbye and handed me back the phone. Then they went into the bathroom.

“Okay Baby Girl, I need you to do something very important. Any you guys too.” They nodded. “You need to go to school and pretend you don’t know anything about what happened with Ruth, okay. Maybe ask if anyone has seen her today, but only once. We don’t want you guys to be associated with her disappearance at all. Understood?”

“Okay Daddy. We will. You be careful, okay. I love you and I miss you. I wish you were holding me tonight.”

“You and Beth can comfort each other, okay. I’ll talk to you later. Love you super lots!” Robyn and Ruth came out right after I hung up the call. Ruth just had panties on and Robyn was careful to keep the tee-shirt pulled down. Then it hit me. She didn’t have panties. She hadn’t been wearing any under her skirt. “Alright girls. Bedtime, right? Sleep well. Tomorrow we will leave Texas and hopefully leave all of your troubles behind.”

“Goodnight J... goodnight my hero.” she said looking gratefully at me before turning out the light. I took off my pants on the other side of my bed and slept in my boxers. I turned out the light and thought about this young woman who was once again turning my life upside down as Sam had before. I couldn’t believe how much I was turned on by her. Race never really mattered to me. It’s all pink on the inside, as they say. Two of the women I had been with had been Asian, three latinas and one was black. Robyn was different. She was... unique, at least for me.

Ruth was even lighter skinned than Robyn. In fact most people would probably assume she was white. She was a very beautiful little girl though. She wasn’t even 8 yet so she still looked like a child. I did wonder what her little slit would look like though. I wondered how it would compare to Sam and Beth. But Robyn intrigued me more. Just then I felt someone climb into my bed, sliding under the covers. I felt Robyn’s body slide up next to me and then I felt Ruth

getting in behind her. “Is it okay if we sleep next to you?” she asked, anxiously. “We’re both a little scared to be alone.”

“Yeah, it’s okay. I understand.” I said. I stayed on my back and I felt her turn toward me and put her hand across my chest, holding me for support. I didn’t think there was anything sexual about it. She was just a frightened young woman. Somewhere out there was someone, or multiple someones who were trying to kill her. She’d be crazy not to be scared. I put my hand over hers and squeezed it. “Don’t worry, Byn. I’ll keep you safe. It’s what I do.” She relaxed and was asleep in two minutes. I couldn’t sleep yet. I could feel her body next to me, so warm and inviting. She smelled incredible too. I could feel my cock getting hard but I ignored it. This was not the time.

I woke up the next morning and I thought I was sleeping next to Sam, spooning her. My cock was hard and between her legs, wedged up beside her pussy. I slid it out and back in a little, on instinct, really. But it felt different, somehow. I opened my eyes slowly to realize it wasn’t Sam next to me, but Robyn. And my cock was wedged next to her very wet pussy. I froze, remembering the previous day. I was not going to take advantage of this desperate girl. I slowly and carefully pulled my cock out. Then I slowly slid back out of bed. Both Robyn and Ruth were still sleeping.

I slowly and carefully walked to the bathroom, quietly shut the door and fapped like I hadn’t in months. It didn’t take long to cum. Wow, that was close. I cleaned up and slowly opened the bathroom door. Then I heard it. Soft noises from the bed and heavy breathing. I peered around the corner and I could see Robyn on her back with one hand between her legs, the other pinching her nipples. She was masturbating as well. My cock grew hard again and soon I was masturbating, again. I could hear her pace quicken and I knew she was going to cum soon. I quickened my pace and somehow I was able to cum at the same time. I heard her stir and knew I didn’t have time to clean up. I quietly went back in the bathroom and shut the door. Then I turned on the shower.

Holy Shit! Did that actually happen. Was she awake when I woke up and pulled me dick out or did she just wake up horny because I had made her wet. What did it -. Knock Knock. “Hero? Can you hear me? I really have to pee. Is it okay? I promise not to look if you don’t.” Holy Fuck!

“Um, yeah. I guess it’s okay.” I said. How was my dick getting hard again?!? I heard the door open and the lid on the toilet open. I decided not to try and hide my hard on. I turned in profile so she could see the blurry outline through the curtain if she was looking. I soaped myself up and went about the rest of my shower. I heard the lid close on the toilet.

“I’m not going to flush in case the water gets hot. I wouldn’t want to burn you. Go ahead and flush it, okay?” She left without waiting for a response. I finished my shower and dried off. I put my boxers back on. My dick had gone back down, thank God. I was about to leave and I remembered to flush. As I was about to push down the handle my curiosity got the better of me and I slowly opened the lid to peek inside. There was nothing strange, just some yellowish water, some bits of TP... wait. There were a couple of bigger wads of TP and there was something white on them... My Jizz! She had wiped up my jizz on the floor. She knew that I was masturbating while watching her masturbating. I flushed and walked out as if nothing had happened. Let’s see where this went. “Do you feel better? Nice and clean?” she asked.

“Yep. I feel great. A wonderful morning, isn’t it? Did you sleep well?”

“I did, thank you. A very refreshing morning, actually. I’m going to take a shower now, if it’s okay. Ruth, get up. Time to shower! Get up sleepy head.” She shook Ruth awake and she got up slowly. Then she striped off her undies. I finally got to see her little pussy and I liked what I saw. Wasn’t much to see, but I liked it. Then she followed her mom to the shower. I was so busy watching Ruth that I almost missed Robyn walking in front of her. The tee-shirt had



ridden up and I could see the bottom of her ass as she walked away. And it was a really nice ass. I looked up as she turned the corner and I saw that she was looking back at me.

10 minutes later they finished and came out, wrapped in towels. “Can you help Ruth get dressed, Hero?” she asked me. Then she turned to the mirror and started putting on her make-up. I guess I wasn’t supposed to see her without it, even though I generally don’t like girls to be too made-up. I was sitting on the far bed and Ruth came over. Her panties were on the floor where she had dropped them. She dropped her towel right in front of me and then reached down to get the panties. Then she hopped on the bed across from me. She pulled one of her legs up to slide the panties on. In the process she had spread her legs a little and gave me a nice view of her vulva. After she got one leg in the panties she leaned back on the bed putting both of her legs up in the air. She pulled her other leg in so she could get that in the panties too. That meant that both of her legs were spread open and I got the full view. So beautiful. It was all I could do to keep my self from just diving in for an early breakfast.

Then she put on the jersey by itself which draped on her. “First stop we need to get you guys some clothes. I’m thinking a thrift show were we can get some used clothes that won’t stand out. What do you think Byn?” I asked using my pet name for her.

“Sounds good, Hero. This little dress of mine doesn’t really blend in. And Ruth looks kind of ridiculous like that. Let’s go.”

And we were off. “Hey Byn,” I said as we were driving. “Uh... I’m not really comfortable with you calling me Hero. I like pet names and I use them all of the time, but that one is kind of too much.”

“Okay, I can understand. Hmmmm, how about I shorten it to just Ro. I still think of you as my hero, so that’s what it will mean to me. I like Byn, by the way. No one has ever used that before and it seems so obvious.” We arrived at the closest thrift shop which had just opened. It was almost deserted which was good. “Okay, you stay out

here with Ruth. She will attract too much attention like that. I'll get a few different outfits. How about you." I gave her my sizes and handed her \$100 in twenties. I didn't want to use a credit card that could be traced. I keep a grand stored in the truck in fifties and twenties just in case. I'd have to get more soon, though. "Okay, be right back" she said as she hopped out.

"How are you holding up, Bino." I asked Ruth, using my new pet name for her.

"Bino? Is that me?" she asked, confused.

"Yep. It's my new name for you. I don't know if you know about Babe Ruth. He was a famous baseball player. Your name is Ruth, and you're a babe, at least I think so." She blushed. "But Babe Ruth is even longer to say than Ruth. I thought about calling you Babe, but lots of people use babe. One of Babe Ruth's nicknames was Bambino, which means baby in Italian. I just shortened it to Bino. So how are you holding up, Bino?"

"I'm doing a lot better now that Mommy and I are safe. Thank you so much for rescuing us, JJ. That's my new name for you. How do you like it?"

"I like it, Bino. I like it a lot." She smiled. She had a beautiful smile. Nothing will ever match Sam's smile, but it was still special. Robyn came back out with a couple of bags of clothes and some used luggage I noticed. Smart woman. She climbed in back. "Looks good. Good idea getting the luggage. I didn't think of that."

"Thanks. I just figured carrying a bunch of bags in and out of motels would attract attention too." She helped Ruth change into something more normal. "We need to stop by a Walmart too so we can get more socks and underwear. I need a pair of comfortable shoes too."

“You don’t need to wear panties on my account.” I quipped, earning a blush from her too. After stopping for breakfast we drove to the nearest Walmart and all went in this time. “You guys go get the clothes, I’ve got to go get something. I’ll meet you in electronics.” We were in Texas so it wasn’t very tough to get a gun and ammo. There were killers after us, after all. I don’t like to use guns, but I’m not stupid. I met them back in electronics. “I need to get a laptop. We need some burner phones too. Why don’t you get a gameboy or something for Ruth too.” After that we went back to the sporting good section and bought some fishing gear. “We’re going to a fishing cabin, so we need to look like we belong. Lets get some snacks for the road and get going.” I used a credit card to buy everything since I had to give out my personal info for the gun anyway. I got a bunch of cash from an ATM as well. Might as well do it all here in one place so we didn’t leave a trail. We headed out for Arkansas.

## Chapter 42: Fishing Vacation

We stopped at motel just over the border in Arkansas. I made sure they had good Wifi. We settled in for the night. Ruth loved her Nintendo DS and all of the games we got her. I set up the laptop and booked us a nice cabin near Hot Springs for two weeks. I also reached out to the group who got me the new identity for Sam. I figured I might have to do the same for Robyn and Ruth. Robyn went into the bathroom to get ready for bed and I started a video call to Sam. She came up on the screen, completely nude. “Daddy! I missed you so much. How is everything? Want some special time?” she asked, winking.

“Sam! Careful. Robyn and Ruth don’t know about the special relationships. I love the view, but please dress and go into public mode, okay?” I looked around after shielding the screen. Robyn was still in the bathroom and Ruth was busy playing the game, so no one saw anything.

When I turned back to the laptop Sam was off the screen. I heard her getting dressed. “So what has been going on? Where are you?” She came back on the screen and she was fully dressed, as far as I could see.

“I can’t tell you Baby Girl. I trust you not to tell anyone but no matter how secure I think this connection is there is always a chance someone is listening in. These people that are after Robyn and Ruth are very dangerous and we can’t risk it. I can tell you that we are safe and that we are going to be laying low, taking a little vacation kind of, until we can figure out what to do.”

“Okay Daddy. I understand. Can I talk to Ruthie?”

“Sure thing.” I got up and went over to Ruth. “Hey Ruth. Sam wants to talk to you. Remember not to say anything about where we

are or where we are going, okay? We don't want anyone to be able to find us, right?"

"Okay JJ. I'll be careful." She went over to the laptop and started chatting with Sam.

Robyn came out of the bathroom dressed for bed. She had gotten a long nightshirt that said 'Juicy' on it. From what I learned this morning I think that it is very accurate. It wasn't skin tight like her dress but it was still very form fitting. I didn't see the outline of panties and part of me, a very horny part, hoped she wasn't wearing any. "What do you think?" she asked. "Kind of boring, I know. I didn't get you any PJs though. I hope that's okay."

"It's not boring at all. I like it. I like simple outfits, especially PJs. I think you look great. And I'll just wear boxers. It would feel weird wearing PJs anyway since I don't normally wear them."

"Well you don't need to wear underwear on my account." She said, winking at me. She walked over to the laptop and started talking to Sam. I was very tempted to sleep in the buff, like I normally do, but I decided against it. At least for now. I still didn't feel comfortable pursuing anything physical with her right now. It felt too much like I was expecting some kind of payback for helping her, and that was not the case. "Okay. Goodnight Sam. I have to get Ruth ready for bed. Nice talking to you." She pulled Ruth away after she said her goodbyes and they went over to the suitcase to get out her PJs. Once again Ruth just stripped right out in the open, not self-conscious at all. She did put on some new panties and a light nightshirt like Robyn's, but her dress had little bears on it.

"Goodnight Sam. I love you so much. Say hi to everyone and let them know we're okay." She blew me some kisses and we closed the chat down. Robyn and Ruth had climbed in the other bed and turned out the lights. I grabbed a clean pair of underwear and took off my pants and shirt. Robyn was turned the other way so I just changed my boxers out here instead of going into the bathroom. As I put the dirty

clothes in a pile on the floor I noticed that I could see Robyn in the mirror, which meant she could see me. Her eyes were closed now, but I didn't know if they had been before. I climbed into bed and turned out the light. I didn't think about Robyn too much. My thoughts drifted to our situation and what we were going to do. Tomorrow I was going to tell Robyn about Sam and how I planned to get her a new ID too. It was the only way for them to be safe, I figured. Pretty soon I was asleep too.

I slept through the night and woke up gently, just as it was starting to get brighter outside. I figured it must have been about 7 AM or so. I heard a noise coming from the other bed. It sounded a little familiar. I carefully and slowly opened my eyes and turned my head to face the other bed. Robyn had her night shirt pulled up and she was masturbating again. One hand was rubbing her pussy and the other was squeezing her tits. They were beautiful tits. A nice B-cup and still very young and firm. The rest of her body was gorgeous too. Her pussy was shaved bare and she had two fingers inside. I could hear the familiar smacking sounds of a wet pussy getting fingered. The she stopped suddenly.

I looked up at her face to see her eyes were open and she was looking at me. I kept looking at her and brought my hand down to pull my dick out of my boxers and start stroking it. She started to finger herself again. I was already hard. We just looked at each other as we masturbated in our own beds. We didn't say a thing, or even look away. Our expressions barely changed at all, just getting that look of building ecstasy. We kept in sync and soon we were both cumming. It felt so good. So much better than just jerking off myself, only because she was there watching.

Apparently she was prepared because she reached over to the side table and grabbed a wet washcloth. She then proceeded to clean herself off, wiping all of the juice off of her pussy and then her hand. She handed the washcloth to me. I grabbed it and immediately brought it up to my face, inhaling her scent. It was intoxicating. I found an especially wet part and stuck it in my mouth, sucking her

juices out. She watched attentively and I could tell she was so turned on. Then I took it and cleaned up all of my cum. I handed it back. She then brought it up to her face and inhaled. She found a part with a lot of my cum on it and proceeded to stick it in her mouth and suck my cum out. I was getting hard again. She looked down at my growing dick and smiled.

Then she threw the washcloth towards the bathroom and pulled down her nightshirt. She turned to Ruth and started to shake her. "Time to get up Ruth. Let's get some breakfast and head out. I can't wait to see the cabin!" She turned back around and brought her legs out of the bed. She kept them apart a little so I could see up the shirt and see her pussy. She lingered for a bit as I stared at it. When I looked back up at her face she closed them and stood up, as if nothing whatsoever had happened. She was cool. This was becoming a fun game. I still felt bad about moving the relationship in this direction. But I hadn't initiated anything. I was only following her lead. I wasn't shutting it down though, which was encouraging it. I wanted her to know she didn't need to do this. It was important to me somehow.

We all got up and got dressed. Robyn didn't go into the bathroom to change this time. She just changed right out in the open with Ruth. She didn't flaunt it or make any big deal about it. I guess she figured there was no need for modesty anymore.

We packed up and headed out, grabbing breakfast on the way. By early afternoon we were there. On the way in we stopped and picked up a bunch of groceries to feed us for a while. We wanted to be able to get in there and stay. I had made sure this place had decent internet access. I stopped by the main office and paid in advance for the whole two weeks. We told them we didn't want to be disturbed and that we were trying to get away from everything. They understood. They'd seen it before. The cabin was way back in the woods on a tributary of a man-made lake. There was a dock and everything. We unpacked and explored the area. No one around that

we could see. The nearest cabin was 500 feet away through the woods. It was perfect.

“This is great, Ro. Nobody is going to find us here.” Robyn said when we got back. “The water looks nice enough to swim in. We didn’t bring suits, but I don’t think that will stop us.” She said, winking.

“There is a ladder off of the dock, so I guess people do swim here. It’s kind of cold though. I’m not so sure I’m up for it. Let’s get settled in.” I turned to walk up to the cabin.

“What’s wrong? Afraid of shrinky dinks?” she laughed. “Don’t worry. I know how those things work.” She walked past me and into the cabin to start unpacking. “I’m not sure what we’re going to do up here though. We can’t fish all of the time. I wish we had brought some books.”

“If the internet is good enough we can watch stuff on the laptop. I can download some books to read on the phones. I see someone left some cards. Oh, look. Crossword puzzles too.”

We got unpacked and put a roast in for dinner. Ruth was playing her game and I asked Robyn to come out and sit with me on the porch swing to talk. “I told you Sam had gone through something similar to what you are going through last year. I think it is time for you to hear the whole story.” So I told her about how Sam and I met, our escape and her new identity. Then how I came to live by Pete and Jess and how Sam and Beth became the best of best friends. I didn’t mention sex at all, though.

“So you have done something like this before, huh. I guess that explains why you seem to know what to do. You think the only way Ruth and I will be safe is for us to get new identities? Isn’t that expensive?”



“Unless something changes, yes, I think it is the only way for you to be safe. Don’t worry about the money, I have plenty. The big downside is that you won’t be able to stay in Austin. You’d have to move, preferably out of state, across the country.” She frowned at that. “It would mean leaving everything and everyone you know behind, but you would be safe and Ruth could have a happy, normal life.”

“Oh Ro! I don’t want to leave! I want to stay with you!” she cried as she hugged me and started crying on my shoulder. After a minute or two she got herself back together. “But I know you’re right. It’s the only way.”

“That reminds me Byn. This little game we’re playing. I’m enjoying it a lot. But I have to make sure you know that you don’t need to do this. I’m going to help Ruth and you no matter what. You don’t owe me anything. Do you understand?” I held her head in my hands and stared right into her stunning green eyes. I needed her to understand.

“Yes Ro, I understand. I find it hard to believe, or rather I did. But I understand. Whatever happens is because I want to, not because I think I need to.” She told me solemnly. I could tell that she did understand. “So how do you get us new identities?”

“Last night I sent a message to the group that got me Sam’s new identity. I’ll go online here in a minute and see if they responded. It is a slow process. These people are very secretive, for obvious reasons. For now, just sit here and enjoy this beautiful Spring day with me, swinging.” It was so nice, holding her and listening to the sounds of the forest. No cars, no music blaring. Just peace and quiet. We went back in and had dinner. It was like we were a little family. I really wished Sam was here. I thought about following Robyn where she went with Sam. But I didn’t know if Sam would want to go. I couldn’t just uproot her. Would Pete and Jess follow us? Could we all start again, somewhere new?

The Internet connection was surprisingly good. I checked, but there was no reply about the new ID. We watched a movie on the laptop that night. Ruth had never seen *The Little Mermaid*. It was one of Robyn's favorite movies and I liked it too. After the movie it was bath time for Ruth. The cabin had a tub built for two with water jets. It sounded like Ruth was having a blast in the tub. Robyn was cleaning up after dinner and I looked in on her. She was facing away from me and I could see she had discovered how much fun those jets could be for a little girl. I smiled and walked away, not wanting to disturb her or let on that I knew.

Ruth finished her bath and got ready for bed. She climbed in and Robyn made up a story for her, since we didn't have any kids books. She was a really good storyteller and created a fun story for Ruth. Robyn had done this before it seemed because in no time Ruth was asleep. "Works every time." She said, walking up to me. I was working on the laptop and she came up behind me, put her head on my shoulder to look what I was doing and wrapped her arms around me. "I'm going to take a bath myself." She said after a minute. "That looks kind of boring. Care to join me?" She stood up and started walking towards the bathroom. I looked over and saw that she was dropping clothes the whole way. She stepped out of her skirt right before she reached the bathroom. No panties again.

She started the water and I knew it would be a while for it to fill up. What should I do? I didn't know. I wanted to fuck her hot little brains out, but I didn't feel ready for that. Oral maybe; should I eat her out, taste her juicy little caramel colored pussy? The water stopped. I heard her climb in the tub. "Ooooo. The water is perfect, Ro. Are you going to join me?" Then the water jets started. I decided to take it slow. Second base tonight. Time to see how that pretty little pussy feels. I got up and stripped off my clothes. I walked in the bathroom, but my dick wasn't hard yet. I climbed into the tub opposite her and settled down in.

She grabbed a loofah and body wash and lathered it up. Then she started scrubbing her arms. Then she got up and sat on the side of the

tub. She then started on her body. She scrubbed and rubbed her tits for a long time before moving down to her belly. I noticed a big scar on her belly and realized it was from a C-section. She was only 15 when Ruth was born and she was petite. It made sense that the doctors didn't think her hips were wide enough to give birth. 100 years ago she would have died. It also meant that her birth canal had not passed a baby through it. That got me even more excited. Then she lifted up each of her legs and scrubbed it as well. Lastly she spread her legs and washed her pretty little pussy. Then she stood in the tub and turned around. "Can you do my back, Ro?"

"Of course, Byn. I'm always happy to help a lady in need." She chuckled at that as I grabbed the loofah and started to scrub her back. I was slow and careful, enjoying the feel of my hands on her slick, unblemished skin. I worked down to her butt and started to scrub there as well. "You missed your butt. Can't have that." I really enjoyed rubbing my hands all over her tight ass. I used my fingers to clean her butthole, even sticking one inside. She was shaking. "Let's make sure you got everything." I said as I stood up and approached her from behind.

My cock was rock hard, of course. I let it poke her ass as I put my hands around her hips. I moved them forward rubbing all over her taught stomach and working my way up. I reached her tits and started to squeeze and rub them. I started to pinch her nipples and her shaking was getting more intense. She could barely stand. I positioned my cock under her cheeks and slid it in her thigh gap. The feeling of her warm pussy above it was exquisite. Then I moved my hands down again, sliding over those sexy abs. I reached her pussy and my fingers started to massage her pussy. I was stroking my dick along her slit while my fingers found her clit and started to rub it. She finally came, shuddering. She would have collapsed if I wasn't holding onto her. I waited until she had regained her strength and pulled my cock out. "There, I think you're all clean now." I said as I sat back down.

She turned around and sat back down, still a little unsteady. “Thank you Ro. That was wonderful. You managed to reach all of the places I have trouble getting to. I think I will definitely need your help again in the future. Now how about you? Do you need any help?”

“Sure. Let me get where I can and then you can do my back, okay?” She nodded. I grabbed the loofah and lathered it up. Then I scrubbed myself all over, except for my cock. Then I handed her the loofah and sat down in front of her. “There. You can do my back... and anyplace else I might have missed.” She scrubbed my back all over and then dropped the loofah, using her hands to rub all over my arms. She used her hands to actually give me a neck massage, which felt so good I told my cock to wait. Then she moved her hands around and rubbed my chest, running her hands through my chest hair. She played with my nipples a little and then moved down. Eventually her hands found my cock.

“Oh, I don’t think you got this. It feels really dirty. I think it is going to need a good cleaning.” She started stroking it with one hand, then she used two. Then one hand went down and gently massaged my balls. She even got a hand down to rub my asshole, but it was a long stretch for her. Then she changed hands on my dick and moved the other one up to play with my nipples. “How is that? Am I doing a good job?” she asked. I nodded. She reached up with her hand to caress my face. Then she stuck her fingers in my mouth and I sucked on them. She gently turned my head so she could start to gently bite and suck on my earlobes too. I was almost ready to cum. “Oh, I think you are just about clean. Time to finish.” I turned my head as far as I could and we shared an awkward kiss. She brought both hands down to my cock now and started to really stroke it. In no time at all I came, my cock erupting with jizz.

When I finished she reached down and opened the drain. “Time to shower off and wash our hair.” I moved and she stood up, stepping out of the tub and walking into the shower before turning it on. I watched her walk away and I couldn’t believe how sexy she was. I

stood up and joined her in the shower. We didn't talk. We just looked at each other as we washed our hair. Then we rinsed off and she turned off the water. She walked right up in front of me and looked up at me. "Thank you Ro." She said as she reached up and pulled my head down to kiss her. It lasted about a minute with just a little tongue. Then she broke it, gave me another long look and turned to leave. She grabbed a towel and started to dry off.

"I would prefer to keep Ruth in the dark for now." She said as she finished drying off and reached for her night shirt. "So I'm going to dress for bed and I'd like you to as well. I would like to sleep in your bed though, if it is okay."

"Of course, Byn. I enjoyed feeling you next to me the night before last."

"I could tell how much you enjoyed it when you woke up!" she laughed. So she was awake. "I was afraid you knew that I had slid your dick in there. It felt so good. It felt really good just now too. So why haven't I felt more of it? Or tasted it?" she asked, rather abruptly. She didn't beat around the bush, this girl.

"As I explained, I don't want you to do this for the wrong reasons. Going slow means you won't rush into something you might regret later. Besides, the journey can be more impactful than the destination sometimes. Weeds spring up overnight but beautiful flowers reveal themselves slowly."

"That's... that's a very nice way to think about it. I understand." She said as she climbed into bed. "No get in here and hold me, my Hero. I want to feel safe in your arms."

## Chapter 43: From Hero to Zero

When the next morning dawned I awoke to feel two girls beside me. Robyn was on one side, snuggled up close. Ruth was on the other with her arms wrapped around one of my arms. It felt nice and I could have stayed there forever except I had to pee. I slowly pulled my arm out of Ruth's grasp and slid down the bed, exiting from the bottom. Before I went to the bathroom I went to the side of the bed, picked up Ruth and moved her next to Robyn. They both naturally snuggled together and I put the blanket back over them. I went outside to pee; I was a guy in the middle of the woods, after all. Then I sat in the swing and enjoyed the morning. It was cold but the sun was shining right on me and warming me up. I wasn't sure how long I had been out there when I heard the cabin door open up.

"There you are!" Robyn said as she came out and joined me on the swing. She was cold and got right up next to me, pulling her legs up inside her nightshirt to stay warm. I put my arm around her and rubbed her, trying to warm her up. "Why are you out here all alone? Is there something wrong?"

"No, not really. I came out to pee and I just wanted to enjoy the morning. I am a little sad though. I keep thinking about you leaving and I hate the idea. That fucking Senator Van Murderer dude is really pissing me off. What if you went public? A DNA test would prove it and he'd never go through with killing you once your story was out there."

"I can't do that Ro. It would ruin Ruth's life and she is more important to me than anything. Anything. I know you of all people can understand that, right?"

"Yeah, I do. And you're right. How about some kind of doomsday pact, or whatever. Insurance. You create caches with videos and DNA evidence that are distributed to lots of different people. Let him know that if anything happens to you that it will

come out and he'll be arrested for murder too, not just fathering a child with a 14 year old girl."

"I thought of that, but it is too dangerous. Too many things could go wrong and there would still be a big chance of the story getting out there and ruining Ruth's life. I just won't do it. I don't give a flying fuck about him, only Ruth."

"Okay." I gave in. She was right. "Well one way or another I'm not going to just push you away. If you want me around I'll make it happen, one way or another."

"Of course I want you around Ro. I... I... I love you." She finally said. "I've only known you three days but already I can't picture my life without you in it." She kissed me quick and went back to snuggling. Damn, that felt good to hear.

"I love you too, Byn." I said and then laughed. "It sure wasn't at first sight though! I didn't know what to make of you, holding a knife on me." That got a laugh out of her too. "I guess it was when we left the school and I saw how much you loved Ruth. I think I knew then that anyone who loved their child that much was someone I could love. After that the door was open and you just walked in."

"Lets get some breakfast. Then you can teach us how to fish." Bacon and eggs for breakfast. Neither of us were really great at cooking. I can grill and I know how to do most of the basic things, but I'm not a kitchen wiz by any means. I let the bacon cook too long and the cabin got all smokey. We had to open some windows to air it out but it was turning into a nice day. The second batch of bacon came out much better and we all enjoyed our breakfast.

We needed bait to fish so we started by hunting for worms and insects that we could use. Robyn was not a fan and didn't want to touch anything, but she did point them out for us. Ruth was a typical kid and had no problem with worms and bugs. It wasn't very long and we were ready to try some fishing. The dock had a table on the end

with a bench and space for some chairs. There was even a live well and a fish cleaning station. I got to work putting everything together, setting up the tackle and picking hooks. We just used simple bobbers. I showed them how to bait the hooks and cast out into the lake.

“So when does this get fun?” Ruth asked after 15 minutes.

“Fishing is about patience and enjoying nature.” I tried to explain, knowing it wasn’t going to work on her. Just then her bobber started jiggling. “Look Ruth, your hook has a fish nibbling on it, see. Now wait until the fish sucks it in and the bobber goes under. Then yank on the rod to set the hook.” She watched and waited. “Now!” I said and she jerked on her pole. It worked. The pole bent down as the fish tried to swim away. “Okay, you got one!” She was so happy. “Now reel him in with slow, steady pulls. Yeah, like that.” She did great for her first catch. I grabbed the net and kneeled down at the edge of the dock. She brought the fish in and I scooped it up. “Yeah. Your first catch Ruth. It’s a big one too.” It wasn’t that big, but it was legal.

“Wow JJ. This is awesome. Look mommy!”

“That’s great Ruth. I’m jealou... Hey, look at my bobby. It’s doing that thing too!” Robyn said, excitedly.

“Just do what Ruth did. Wait for it to bite and set the hook.” Robyn did just that and reeled in her own fish. It was a little smaller than Ruth’s, but still legal. “Wow! I’ve never heard of two new fisher-women doing so good on their first outing. You girls are great.” It didn’t last. We didn’t get anything else before we broke for lunch. They were still excited though.

After lunch we watched a movie to relax. “Okay, movie’s over. Let’s go back out and see if we can catch a few more fish for dinner.” They agreed and we went out to do some more fishing. Ruth caught another but it was too little and we threw it back. Robyn then caught the biggest one yet. I wasn’t fishing myself because I was just helping



them. Then I got a call from Sam. “Hey Baby Girl, what’s up?” I asked her.

“Daddy, I miss you so much and I’m really horny. Do you have a little time for your special little girl?” How could I say no to that?

“Hey, you guys keep fishing, okay? I need to take this up there.” I told them. Neither one of the had any problem so I headed back up to the cabin. I fired up the laptop and started a video call to Sam. This time when she answered naked I didn’t complain. “Oh, I’ve missed you so much Baby Girl. I wish I was there to kiss you. I would kiss your neck and your ears and work my way down to your budding little titties. They look so good!” I had my dick out and I was stroking away.

“Oh Daddy! I want to lay down and have you suck on my titties while I lick your nipples. My hands would reach down and grab your cock and stroke it.”

“As I suck on your nipples my hands slide down your beautiful belly to find your waiting snatch. I start rubbing around it, on the sides, on your inner thighs. So close but so far. Then my fingers brush our swollen pussy lips and your start to shake. I start rubbing more and more until I have two fingers deep inside, rubbing your pussy and bringing you close to orgasm.” She was fingering herself like mad. God, how I wished I was there to do this in person. But it was still so wonderful to be sharing this experience with her.

“I keep slowly stroking your cock. My kisses start working my way down your chest, across your stomach and finally reach your waiting cock. I lick the head all over, then open my mouth and slide it over, my lips closing around it and making a seal. I start to suck and slide my tongue up and down your shaft.” I can see she is about to cum I know her so well. I wish I was holding her body and I could feel her as she came.

“My kisses have worked their way down your sweet little body until I finally reach your beautiful bald little cunny. My tongue starts working all around, darting in and out, flicking your clit. Oh God Baby Girl. I’m gonna cum!” I yell, as quietly as I can.

“Oh yes Daddy! Cum for me. My mouth is wrapped around your cock and I feel it start to spasm, shooting wave after wave of your delicious cum into my hungry mouth. I swallow it all down, sucking every last drop out of your cock.” I came along with her narration. It felt so real. In my head I could see her sweet lips around my cock, draining me. “Thank you Daddy. That was nice. I wish you were here to hold me, but this is the next best thing.”

“Well, I certainly enjoyed it too, Baby Girl.” I told her as I cleaned myself up and put my cock back in my pants. “I really wish you were here. When this is over I want to take a vacation like this with you. We haven’t been fishing in a while.”

Just then Beth came into Sam’s room. “Sam. Look at this. You need to call K-Bear.” then she saw me on the screen. “Hey, you’re here. Cool. Looks like you two had a little fun. Sorry I missed it. Hey, but look at the local Austin news on your phone, K-Bear. There is a story about a State Senator who died from a drug overdose.”

I pulled out my phone and searched. Sure enough, there was an article. ‘Daniel Van Maarten, State Senator from Austin, was found dead last night of an apparent drug overdose.’ This was very good news. Good riddance. That bastard got off easy, in my opinion. “That’s the guy. Thanks SweetB. This is great news. Let me go tell them. Love you both. Bye!” I headed outside and down to the dock. “Byn! Look at this!” I said and I gave her the phone. She read it and then turned to look at me, sheer joy on her face.

“This is it! Oh my God! I’m sure he had help with his overdose. I bet some important people didn’t like that he was hiring contract killers. I need to talk to my friend to see if it is safe now. Do you think it is okay for me to contact him?”

“We have to find out if it is safe to come back. Here, let me connect through an anonymous VOIP call. There are places that will let you make untraceable calls.” I set it up and gave her the phone. Then I went over to Ruth to see how the fishing was going. She hadn’t caught anything else yet.

“Yes!” Robyn yelled. “We’re safe! We are truly safe. My friend says the contracts are gone. They generally get paid half when they take the contract and half when it is done. If they won’t get paid to finish, there is no reason to continue.” She gave me a hug, but it seemed different, somehow. Learning your life wasn’t in danger anymore would have to have some kind of effect. “Let’s go back. Tonight! I don’t want to wait any more.”

I couldn’t argue with her logic. No need to wait. “Okay. Let’s do it.” We told Ruth and she was very excited. I threw the fish in the live well back in the lake. “Looks like they get to go free as well now. Everyone wins!” I joked. We packed everything up and were on the road in half an hour. I dropped the keys at the office. We had only used one of the 14 days I paid for. I told them I might actually be returning before the two weeks were up. I was hoping I would, at least. It was an eight hour drive back to Austin. I decided to drive as far as I could before stopping, which turned out to be Dallas again, a little past half way. I booked us a much nicer place to stay though. No reason to stay in a motel this time.

Something had definitely changed with Robyn though. She wasn’t as close as before. In fact, she seemed a little different. She didn’t call me Ro anymore; I was back to JR. She didn’t joke around anymore and she slept in the bed with Ruth. At first I assumed she was just recovering from the last four days. It was pretty intense. It would take a while to go back to normal. But the next morning she was still distant. Ruth was still happy and joking but Robyn just seemed to have shut down.

When we got back to Austin she wanted me to take her straight home. She kept the clothes she had bought for her and Ruth but gave the rest back to me. “Why not just keep them.” I said. “I have plenty and you never know if you, or somebody might need them.” I said, with a wink. No response.

“It’s okay JR. Go ahead and take them. Thank you so much for everything. I can’t begin to tell you how grateful Ruth and I are. You saved us and I’ll always remember that.” She did give me a hug, but it felt kind of cold. I didn’t know what was going on. Ruth gave me a much bigger hug and told me to say high to everyone at the house. She was excited to go back to school and see them again next week.

I left in kind of a daze. What happened. Was everything that happened between us just because I was protecting her, keeping her safe? Now that she didn’t need my protection anymore was it over? I felt like I had been discarded. I almost cried on the way home. I felt like I had been dumped. I hadn’t felt like this since high school. The kids mobbed me when I got back. They wanted me to tell them all about it but I told them I would tell them later. I just wanted to crawl into bed. It was only 4 in the afternoon.

“What’s wrong, Daddy?” Sam asked me, concerned. I tried to explain the best I could, how I had fallen in love with Robyn and I thought she had fallen in love with me. How it all changed yesterday when she learned that nobody was trying to kill her anymore. I told her how I felt used and then I did start to cry. Here I was, a 33 year old grown man and I was being comforted by my 11 year old daughter. “Ruthie is a great girl, but I’ve never met Robyn. I don’t think she was using you though. There must be some other reason. Why don’t you go for a swim? We’re watching Ghostbusters tonight. That should cheer you up. I’ll sit on your lap and feed you popcorn. How does that sound?” That made me laugh. My little girl knew how to cheer me up.

“Okay. That does sound like fun, Baby Girl. I really did miss you. I can hardly believe it was only 4 days. I never want to be apart

from you that long again.” I grabbed her and held her tight. No matter what else happened. No matter what other surprises and disappointments the world threw at me, she was my rock.

## Chapter 44: Hero Again

I was feeling much better the next day. It was really nice out and the kids were going to play in the pool. I went into my office to be alone for a little bit and get caught up on what I missed last week. I heard the back door open. “Come check out my room! It’s really cool.” I heard Sam tell someone.

“Okay. I like your house. And I really like your pool. You guys are so lucky.” It was Ruth’s voice I heard, I was sure of it. I got up and came out of my office just in time to see them walk into Sam’s room. “Wow! This is really cool. Ooo. I love your stuffed animals. Can I look at them?”

“Sure, Ruthie. Go check them out. I’ll be right back.” Sam came out of her room, grabbed my hand and walked me back to my bedroom. She sat me on the bed and turned on the TV. Then she changed to the video feed to the pool. Jess was sitting at one of the tables with Robyn. I started to open my mouth to say something and Sam just put her finger over it. “Shhh. Just watch and listen. Jess and I got this.” she said and walked out. “Come on Ruthie, let’s get back to the pool.” I looked at Robyn on the screen and the pain of rejection came flooding back. Why did you do this to me, Sam? This isn’t making it better. It is just making me feel worse.

I turned up the sound so I could hear what they were saying. “I understand that was quite an adventure you had Robyn. Jon didn’t tell me much. He seemed to be enjoying his time with you when I talked to him Thursday morning. When he got home last night he was kind of a wreck. What happened?” Jess was looking out for me. Maybe she could get Robyn to explain.

“It was fun, well. You know, besides having people trying to kill me, that is. I really enjoyed my time with JR, up until Thursday afternoon.”

“When you found out that creep was dead? I would think that would make things better, not worse.”

“Well, that wasn’t what changed things.” she said. So, it wasn’t what I thought. What was it then? “How much do you know about JR and Sam, about their relationship?”

“I know pretty much everything.” Jess said. “Jon told you about how they met and how he rescued her too, right?”

“Yeah, he did. That’s part of why I trusted him so much. He did save Sam and that’s why I felt so good about him saving me. But then I heard him ahhh... talking with Sam. Their relationship is a little ... um...”

“Intimate?” Jess suggested.

“Yes! You know?”

“Yeah, I know, and I approve. I don’t think you know the whole story.”

“Oh, I know enough. I know he rescued her so he could... use her.” Robyn pronounced. I was stunned. The windows! She must have heard Sam and I through the open windows. What would most people assume if a man kidnaps a 10 year old girl and starts to have sex with her? That she was brainwashed, or coerced or somehow forced into it. No wonder she hated me. I would hate me too if that was what I thought.

I heard laughter on the camera. I heard Sam’s laughter. She came walking into view. “Hi Robyn. I’m Sam. I think you have that a little backwards. Daddy didn’t use me. The reason we express our love so intimately is because I molested him!” Robyn just stared at Sam with her mouth open. Then Sam told her the entire story. How she started to play with my dick at night. How I stopped it when I could. How she learned how to make me cum. She told her how I

woke up and she kept going. How she had fallen in love with me, as a daughter and as a lover. How we had a long talk and how I had tried to talk her out of it. She told her that I explained everything to her and warned her but that she didn't care. "So he didn't use me, Robyn. I used him."

Robyn kept staring at Sam, speechless. Then she turned to Jess. "It's all true Robyn. And there's more. I can't believe I'm going to tell you this. Normally I wouldn't tell you in a million years. I wouldn't tell anyone. The only reason I am going to is for Jon's sake. You need to know everything because I think that if you do, you'll understand just what an incredible man he is."

Then she explained her relationship with Ken and how that led to the completely open relationships we all share today. I couldn't believe they were telling her this. "Jon doesn't like secrets. He hates them. See those cameras?" she told Robyn, pointing right up at me. "There are cameras like that in all the bedrooms. Not because he wants to spy but because he wants to be completely open. Nothing goes on in secret around here. No one makes anyone do anything they don't want to do." Robyn looked up at the camera, dumbfounded. Just looking into her eyes again was bringing it all back up. I couldn't help it. I started to cry.

"He's watching us right now." Sam said. "He didn't know you would be here. He is only watching because I went up and basically made him. In fact, if I know him," she laughed, "he's probably crying as he watches this." How the fuck did she know? "He's crying because he hurts. He fell for you, hard. I can see it in him. I know him better than anyone and I would do anything for him. Anything!" she said, forcefully. Strange how we both used that same expression. "I'm doing this for him, not you. Oh, and Ruthie. I want her to have a really cool older sister!" she laughed some more. "I know this is the best thing for him, and for you. You love him, don't you? Despite everything you thought you knew, you still love him." she said, almost commanding her to answer.



“Yes, of course I do!” she blurted out, and started crying herself. “It broke my heart to think about what I thought he did to you. I couldn’t let that happen to Ruth, so I had to leave.”

“And that demonstrates what a good person and wonderful mother you are, Robyn.” Jess told her. “You put her well-being before your own happiness, as any real mother would.”

“But I was wrong about him.” Robyn continued. “He isn’t a monster. You say you are 11 years old Sam, but you can’t be. I’d say you are so much older and wiser. You must have an ancient soul in you. I know now that he didn’t make you do anything.” She started laughing. “From what I can see, no one could make you do anything you don’t want to!” They all laughed at that. So did I.

“It’s true.” Jess agreed. “When they first came to visit Jon told us that ‘Sam had a way of bending the world around her.’ He said he had given up trying to change it and just went along for the ride, that it had always worked out, and it has, for us as well.” She reached out and hugged Sam. “I love you, Samwise. You keep our lives interesting and fill us all with love.” Then she kissed her hard on the lips. Robyn watched the interchange and then nodded in understanding.

“I’m sorry, Ro.” Robyn said, looking straight at the camera. I don’t know what happened right after that because I was running out of my house and down to the pool. As soon as I got there I ran right up to her and grabbed her in a bear hug. I picked her up and twirled her around.

“Don’t you every apologize for protecting your daughter. You did what you had to do, what I would have done in your situation.” I set her down and cupped her face in my hands. I looked her straight in the eyes. Those gorgeous green eyes. “I love you Byn. I love you deep in my heart and soul. I want to be with you always, if you’ll have me.”

“I love you, my Hero, deep in my heart, and my soul. I want to be with you always, to be part of your life. I want Ruth to be part of your... part of our life. And Sam. I want to be a family. Marry me, Ro.”

“Anytime, anywhere. Let’s start our life together.” We hugged and cried tears of joy. Sam and Jess joined in, hugging us as well.

“Mommy! What’s happening?” Ruth said as she came into the pool area with Tyler. Tyler was holding a puppy.

“We’re going to be a family, Ruth. You and me and JJ and Sam. We are a family.” she said and kissed me again.

“Yeah sis! Welcome home!” Sam said as she grabbed Ruth in a hug. Ruth got very excited and jumped up and down with Sam. Then she came over and gave me a big hug.

“I have a new name for you JJ.” she said, looking up at me. “From now on you are Daddy!” That got my tears flowing all over again.

## Chapter 45: Moving In

We all went out to celebrate at a nice family restaurant that we all enjoyed. Table for eight. I was so happy I thought I would explode. I could only sit next to two people so Sam agreed to put Ruth between us. Robyn was next to me too, of course. I lost track of how many times I kissed her that night. On the way home we stopped by Robyn's place and she packed up all the clothes she could manage for her and Ruth. They grabbed a few more things that they needed. We would go get the rest later and she could officially move out.

Robyn unpacked into my... no, into our master bedroom. Ruth moved in with Sam. I wanted to get her a room of her own, but Sam's room would work for now. I figured I would move my office somewhere and Ruth could have it. We discussed integrating them into our rather complex love... octagon now, I guess. Robyn had done her share of partying and said she would be able to deal with it... given time. Ruth was another matter. Robyn didn't want her forced, or talked into anything. I agreed completely. Everyone did. We agreed that we wouldn't hide it, but we wouldn't exhibit it in front of her either. I personally thought Tyler would be her entry, and I was right, as it turned out later.

Our first night was just us, Robin and me. We repeated our bathtub adventure in my whirlpool tub. Robyn started filling the tub and I sat on the bed. She came out to join me as it filled. She sat beside me and laid her head on my shoulder. "I've wanted this since the day after we met, which was actually only five days ago! Seems like another lifetime." I told her.

"I have wanted it too, from about the same time. Even then I felt your were someone special and I wanted to know you better." She lifted her head and kissed me. We shared a deep kiss and our tongues explored each other's mouths in earnest. We started to undress each other as we kissed, only breaking the kiss to remove my shirt. I laid her back on the bed and climbed on top of her. I looked deep into

those eyes again. Those eyes that drew me in the first time I saw them up close. I kissed her cheek, her ears, her neck, her arms. I started to suck on her fingers. "I think the bath is ready." she said. "Come on." She grabbed my hand and led me over to the bath. She turned off the water and then kissed me again before climbing in.

I climbed in after her and we both relaxed, looking at each other, deep in thought. Well, I don't know how deep her thought was. Mine was about 10 inches, from the top of the water down to her sweet pussy. We played a little footsy before I slid out of the contoured seat and 'swam' over to her. I started to kiss her again, moving quicker until I got to her breasts. They were so perfect. Just the right size for a grown women, in my opinion. Perfect little handfuls with large, proud nipples that looked like sweet chocolate kisses. I let my hands explore them as I kissed her on the lips for about a minute. Then I used my mouth to kiss all around those magnificent breasts. I licked her nipples before opening my mouth and sucking on them.

She reached her hand down and started to stroke my hard cock. After a few minutes I stood up and she leaned forward to start licking it. Then she started sucking it. She was talented, more than Sam, but not quite as good as Beth. That was probably because Beth could damn near swallow my cock and Robyn could only go about three quarters down. Sam could actually go deeper now. What she lacked in depth she more than made up for in technique. Her beautiful lips were magic and it felt so good. "If you keep going I'm going to cum." I warned her. "But I can be back in action quickly, with the right incentive." That seemed to make up her mind and she began to suck it harder, coaxing my cock juice out. "Oh, here it comes!" I yelled before unloading into her mouth. She took it all in and swallowed it, just like Sam. I couldn't wait to see these two sharing a load.

Now that my first stage was done I helped her up to sit on the side. I started by sucking her toes and working my way up. Soon I was staring right into what was probably the most exquisite pussy I had ever seen. I love Sam and Beth, but they haven't really developed their own uniqueness yet. Robyn's pussy was almost perfectly

formed. Jess is fun, but Robyn's pussy is much prettier, at least to me. I started to kiss, lick and suck my way all around it, exploring. I know Pete could probably do a better job but I gave it my all and she seemed to really enjoy it. She came at least once, maybe twice. I didn't know her well enough yet to say for sure.

After that I lifted her legs up and spread her ass cheeks. I didn't think she had done a lot of anal. It might be a little uncomfortable for her. That didn't stop me from eating her ass like it was candy. I think she may have come again, but again I wasn't sure. Then I moved back up to her pussy to prepare for my rapidly hardening cock. I stood up and positioned myself. She lifted her legs up and spread them, opening her inviting pussy up, ready for my fully hard cock. I rubbed it around her vulva, generating lots of moans and shudders. Then I slowly slipped it in and started to pump in and out. Deeper and deeper I drove my cock until it was all the way in. Her pussy was plenty deep for me and I started to pound her with long, fast, hard strokes.

She started moaning louder and then crying out. "Fuck me Ro. Fuck my tight, wet pussy. It has been waiting for you, for your cock to fill it up." She brought one hand down to start rubbing her clit and the other started pinching her nipples. I moved one hand up to other nipple and pinched it too. "Oh God, yes. I'm gonna cum, I'm gonna cum!" I put my other hand up to her mouth and she started sucking on my fingers. I felt her pussy start to contract, she was cumming. That was all I needed to put myself over the edge and I began to shoot gobs and gobs of cum deep into her hungry pussy.

After I finished I sat down in the middle of the tub and she sat in front of me, putting her legs behind my back and pulling me in close. We kissed again for a long time as we caught our breath. "I'm glad I'm on the pill. I loved the feeling of you filling my pussy up."

"I've been snipped, so no chance of getting pregnant anyway. Pete is too. It's nice not having to worry about any of that." She nodded her ascent. "Ready for a shower and bed? I'm beat and I'm ready to just hold you tonight. All night." We didn't have to worry

about what to wear to bed anymore. We snuggle up close, feeling our warm bodies against each other and drifted off to sleep in each other's arms.

## Chapter 46: The Captain's Lounge

Robyn was scheduled to work the next day. She was going to cancel and quit, but I asked her not to, not until I got to go watch her at work at least. I wanted to see that sexy girl of mine up on stage making all of the men hard. I've been to my share of strip clubs and 'The Captain's Lounge' was typical. Robyn's stage name was Crystal. Not very original, but it did fit her.

Apparently she was popular because when the emcee called her name there was a lot of cheering. She was amazing. She could climb all over that pole and do moves that seemed to defy gravity. She got a lot of money stuffed in her G-string. A lot of guys liked to rub their face between her perfect tits. I didn't blame them. I wondered how jealous they would be if they knew I was going to sucking on them in a couple of hours. She came out to sit with me when she was done.

"Are you sure you're okay with this? I've had to break up with several boyfriends because they couldn't handle it."

"Then they were insecure. I know you're going to be in my bed tonight, not theirs. That's all I need to know."

"Well, you've earned yourself a special treat." she said as she stood up and led me by the hand into one of the champagne rooms. I had never been in one of these but I had heard about them. Rumor has it that for enough money, anything goes in here. I doubted that was true, but I bet things did go much further than out on the floor or private dances. There were two other girls in there. Both were white and petite. She knew my type. "Ro, meet Amber and Jewel. Bitches, this is Jonathon Rogers and he is my Hero. Do you think you girls can help me rock his world?"

"Oh my, he is gorgeous, girl! You are one lucky bitch!" said one of the girls, Amber I think.

“Mmmm, Yummy. I could just eat him up!” said the other one, Jewel.

“Well he’s mine and his wonder wand is off limits. Feel free to have fun with the rest of him, though!” OMG, was this happening? They led me to a nice padded chair. I figured out why soon. “Start my private playlist Jerry, and then take a break, okay? 20 minutes. Jewel here will make it worth your while, won’t you babe” she said as she kissed her passionately on the lips.

“You got it Crystal.” a voice said over the speakers. “And I’ll see you later, Jewel.” Then some pumped up rave music started playing. Not what I usually listen to, but right now I didn’t really care. Amber started swaying back and forth to the music in front of me. She turned around and started twerking, shaking her shapely ass. She moved it back and started rubbing it on my crotch, over my jeans. Robyn leaned over me and kissed me, wet and hot. I felt my shirt get pulled up and soon someone, Jewel I assume, started licking my nipples.

“Ever had a four-way with strippers, Ro?” Robyn asked. “We’re not allowed to actually fuck a client, but we can sure fuck with their head! I’ve lost count of how many guys walk out with messy underwear when they cum in their pants.” Then she moved down and started sucking my other nipple. I looked down and noticed that somehow Amber had removed her G-string and was rubbing her cunt right on my jeans. I took the hint and moved my hands to remove Jewel and Robyn’s G-strings too. Then I stuck my fingers in there slick little pussies and started to play.

Amber turned around and climbed on top of me. She leaned back and pushed her pelvis up until her pussy was right in front of my face. I wasn’t sure what to do. I felt another pussy start rubbing my restrained hard-on. Then Robyn appeared next to me and gave me a quick kiss. “What’s wrong Ro? Aren’t you hungry.” She turned her head and started to lick Amber’s pussy. I leaned in and joined her, our tongues dancing together with a tasty twat for a dance floor. I reached up with my hands and started playing with Amber’s tits. They were



bigger than I preferred, but still fun to play with. Robyn left me to finish dining on my own.

Jewel got off of my crotch and I felt my belt get undone. Then my fly was opened and my pants were pulled off. Then my boxers were pulled down. Soon a hot pair of lips engulfed my cock. I assumed it was Robyn. Amber climbed off and I saw that it was indeed Robyn sucking my dick. Then Jewel climbed on top of me face down and pushed her twat up in my face. I started munching her as Amber came up behind me, spread Jewel's ass cheeks and started to lick her asshole. She stopped but kept spreading her ass and so I started to lick her ass too. "Oh my Fucking God, Crystal. This guy eats ass like a pro! I am so fucking jealous!"

Robyn stopped sucking me. "Then return the favor!" she said as she pushed my legs way up. My ass was fully exposed and a hand grabbed my cock and started stroking it. Then two hands spread my ass cheeks wide and a tongue started to give me a wonderful rimjob. Then that tongue moved up to lick my taint and start licking my balls as another one started to lick my ass. Robyn appeared next to me again. "How do you like that, Ro? Every had two girls eating your ass at the same time?"

I reached up and grabbed her and kissed her. "I can't believe you are doing this for me! I never imagined! You amaze me." I kissed her again, leaned my head back and enjoyed the double rimjob. I figured I would never get to experience one again.

Amber and Jewel continued to lick my ass when my cock got pulled off the the side and felt Robyn's lips surround it once again. She started sucking for real and I knew she wanted me to cum. "Oh God Byn. Yes. All of you girls, keep it up. I'm gonna cum. Oh God, I'm cumming!" Robyn sucked me dry and all of the girls stopped what they were doing. My legs came back down and I brought my head up just in time to see Robyn dribbling my cum into Amber's mouth. Then Amber dribbled it into Jewel's mouth. Then Jewel dribbled it back into Robyn's mouth, and she swallowed it. "Jesus

Fucking Christ girls! That was fucking amazing! I'm getting hard again!" And I was.

"That was the plan, Darling." Robyn said as she went down and started sucking me again. Amber and Jewel came up on either side of the chair and leaned over to kiss, with their tits sandwiching my head. I turned back and forth sucking any tit I could find. Soon I was hard again and I felt Robyn climb on top of me, cowgirl style. She positioned my cock and slid her pussy down. Then she turned it into a three way kiss as she started sliding up and down on my cock. Amber then broke off and went back behind Robyn to start licking my balls. I started to move my hips but Robyn stopped me. "Don't move, Ro. Just lean back and let me fuck you. Fill me up with your jizz! Jewel, do you think you can climb up here?"

Jewel did climb up. She had one foot on either side of my head and she squatted down, spreading herself wide. I started eating her ass and I felt Robyn start eating her pussy. "I'm almost there Byn! I'm gonna cum real soon." I said. She started bouncing up and down faster and before I knew it I grabbed her hips and shot my load deep inside her. Jewel climbed off and Amber stopped licking my balls. After about thirty seconds Robyn lifted herself off of my cock. I looked down and saw Amber and Jewel's mouths next to each other right under Robyn's pussy. My cream pie slowly leaked out and dripped down into their mouths. Robyn leaned over and kissed me as Amber and Jewel took turns licking every last drop out of Robyn's pussy.

All of the girls then stood up and started getting dressed, which meant they pulled on their G-strings. I got up and Robyn handed me my clothes. "Here. Hurry up and put these on. Our time is almost up." I got dressed quickly and followed the girls out. They just walked out like nothing happened. Robyn walked me to a table in the back and we sat down, her on my lap. "How was that, my Hero? I bet you never expected that in your wildest dreams, did you?"

“Expect it?” I said. “I never imagined something like that was possible! I didn’t know you could be such a nasty little girl!” I kissed her.

“Well don’t get used to it. I called in a lot of favors for that.” She kissed me and then looked at me questioningly. “You look lost in thought. What are you thinking about?”

“I’m thinking about where I can put a stripper pole up in our house.” I said, grinning.

## Chapter 47: Family Vacation

The next morning I decided I wanted to finish what we had started. Our new family needed to get to know each other. I told Sam she wasn't going to school that week, or most of next week. I called the school and told them something came up and we were going out of town. Sam does very well in school and they are flexible, so there wasn't any problem. I let the others know we were going to be gone for over a week. Beth was a little sad, but she was still overjoyed about our new family. Tyler promised to take care of Layla and the pups. He was doing most of it anyway. We loaded up the truck and headed North to Arkansas to finish our fishing trip.

I drove straight through and we got there at dusk. Sam had a Nintendo DS of her own and she played some multi-player games with Ruth in the back seat. Robyn spent most of the trip unbuckled with her head next to me and my arm around her shoulder. I didn't like the example it was giving to the girls, but I wasn't going to stop her. It felt so good to have her next to me. The office was closed but I had called and they said they would leave it open with the keys on the kitchen table. Crime is virtually unheard of there. Almost nobody locks their doors. We unloaded and got ready for bed. Everyone was beat, so we all just went right to sleep.

We had nine days left to enjoy the cabin. We had left the food when we bugged out before, so we didn't even have to buy any more. The first day we all just relaxed and did nothing. We brought books this time and I planned to spend part of the time reading and relaxing. Sam suggested some good books for Ruth and brought some for herself. Now that we had Sam to help us the cooking got easier and tasted better. She spent a lot of time with Ruth, showing her how to cook. Sam was really embracing her new role as a big sister. Ruth loved all of the attention and was eager to learn from Sam. It warmed my heart.

"They are so good together, aren't they?" Robyn said.

“I was just thinking that. I’m so glad. It’s not always easy being an only child. Sam has Beth, but she is actually more of a really close friend than a sister, no matter what they say.”

“Ruth had nobody. She looks up to Sam. I don’t know what it is about her. She is amazing. Blows all of my expectations away.” Robyn observed.

“I know. I wondered about it for a long time but eventually I just learned to accept it, love her and enjoy our life together. Now we get to enjoy it with you guys too. Just like Billie Joe said, ‘I’m so fucking happy I could cry.’”

“I love Green Day!” Robyn exclaimed.

“And just when I thought you couldn’t get any better!” I leaned over and kissed her.

That night Robyn and I decided it was time for Sam to join us. We all got ready for bed and waited until Ruth was asleep. Then Sam came over and climbed into our bed. She had shed her nightshirt on the way. She crawled in on Robyn’s side of the bed and snuggled up next to her under the blanket. “Are you sure you’re ready to do this, Mommy?” she asked Robyn. “Nobody ever has to do anything they aren’t comfortable with, remember?”

“Yes, I’m ready. Yes, I remember. And MOMMY! You called me Mommy!” She gave Sam a big hug. I could tell she was touched.

“Daddy said you gave him a little treat at the strip club you work... worked at. He wouldn’t tell me any more about it. So what did you do for him? I want to know.”

“Well, from what I hear, you’ve actually done just about everything we did, which amazes me. Here’s what happened.” Robyn told Sam what took place in the champagne room at the strip club.

Sam started playing with herself almost from the start. I was getting hard too, remembering it. I slipped off my boxers and proceeded to remove Robyn's nightshirt too. As Robyn continued the story I started to suck on her beautiful mocha-colored titties. I started rubbing Sam's body all over with one of my hands and Robyn's body with the other. Soon my hands were down fingering both of their pussies. They were so different and still both so wonderful. Robyn finished her story and Sam started to kiss her. They made out with each other for almost 5 minutes as I started to eat their pussies, going back and forth every 10 seconds or so.

When they finished making out Sam turned around and climbed up on top of Robyn, pushing her bald young pussy right up into her face. "Oh my God, Mommy. Your pussy is amazing! It is so beautiful. It's what a picture of a perfect pussy would look like. I bet it tastes great too!" She proceeded to start eating her sweet pussy, prompting moans out of Robyn.

I moved my head up by Robyn's to watch as she explored Sam's sweet young cunt. "And your pussy is so wonderful too, Sammy. It's so clean and unblemished. Smooth and... and... and fresh." Then Robyn started to lick Sam. From above I spread Sam wide and began to lick her ass. Sometimes I would lick Robyn's tongue or she would lick mine. There wasn't room for me to get behind Sam, so I just backed off and went down to the other end. I pulled Robyn's legs up to expose her asshole. I started to lick it and tried to stick some fingers in. I couldn't get in there easily and I knew she would need some training if she wanted to do anal without discomfort. Sam could help her there.

Finally I kneeled in front of Robyn's pussy and let Sam suck on my cock for a little bit. Then Sam positioned my cock and I pushed into Robyn's tight pussy. I started fucking her while Sam continued to lick her clit. She came right away, within a minute. Then Sam dismounted and laid me down on the bed before mounting me like a little cowgirl. We started to kiss and make out while Robyn took turns sucking my cock and licking Sam's pussy. Finally she positioned my

cock and Sam slid her slick twat onto it. I lifted Sam up a little and started fucking her from below while Robyn licked her ass. “I’m gonna cum!” I warned them. Robyn pulled me out and started sucking me as I let go and filled her mouth. I could see that Sam looked a little jealous but soon she saw that Robyn was going to share it. One of my fantasies came true as I watched my 23 year old fiance share my cum with my 11 year old daughter. Wow!

I looked over at the other bed and I saw that Ruth was awake and just watching us. She looked over at me but didn’t turn away or hide. I nodded, letting her know it was okay for her to watch. She smiled, glad that she hadn’t done anything wrong. I didn’t say anything to the girls. I collapsed on my side of the bed and we all fell asleep. Sam and I holding Robyn between us.

Robyn and Sam were growing closer as the trip continued. I was 22 years older than Sam, but Robyn was only 12 years older. They were both very mature for their ages. They seemed to get along very well. It bode well for overall family happiness. I spent a lot of time with Ruth, getting to know her better. She was a very intelligent and resourceful little girl. She was only 7 but she was going to turn 8 in two weeks on the same day as Tyler. She liked fishing and we ended up spending a lot of time on the dock together trying to catch something.

“So what did you think about what you saw us doing last night?” I asked her on our first full day there.

“It looked like you guys were having fun. I didn’t know Sam did that stuff too. I thought only grownups did it.”

“Well, in our family we believe that kids can do some of that stuff too, but only if they really want to and understand what they are doing. Sam had been doing it for a while, so she knows all about it. It is important that nobody outside of our family knows about this, okay? If anyone finds out it could be really bad and we wouldn’t be able to see you any more.”

“Okay, I understand. Does Tyler do this kind of thing too?” she asked. I figured Tyler would factor into her thoughts since they are such good friends.

“Yes, as a matter of fact, he does. He does it with Sam and Beth and his mommy.”

“Do you think he would do it with me?”

“Well, yes, I do. You would need to talk to your mommy and Tyler’s mommy and daddy first though.”

“Okay.” she said finally and went back to fishing. This was going to get interesting.

We went hiking and explored the local area. We found out there was marina and we could rent a boat to go out on the lake. We spent a whole day out there. We all spent some time reading and relaxing. We also watched some movies together. I had brought along a small projector and we used a white sheet on the wall. Not ideal, but it worked. All in all it was a great trip and we all got to know each other a lot better.

Sam and Robyn and I did all kinds of things in bed. Ruth was usually watching so we stopped trying to be careful and waiting until she went to sleep. We even had some morning and mid-day sessions. Eventually Ruth started to masturbate while she watched us. She examined her pussy and explored. She even started to stick some fingers in her pussy and up her ass. It was a real turn-on.

Robyn confessed to me that it turned her on a lot more than she thought it would. She said she had always been very protective of Ruth and didn’t want anyone to do anything to her. Ruth exploring and learning on her own, without anyone making her, that was very different. She remembered doing it herself when she was young. She was so confused back then and didn’t know what was going on. It had



hampered her development and may have led to her becoming such a wild child. Seeing Ruth learn the truth of it all early made her think she would have a better, healthier sex life later.

Our last night Sam said she had a surprise. She pulled out her strap-on dildo and grinned. “Definitely!” Robyn said as she helped Sam strap it on. “It has been a while since I had a DP. What do you want? Pussy or ass?” she asked Sam.

“Both! No need to limit ourselves. How about your ass first!” The dildo Sam was using was a lot smaller than my cock so I figured it would be good to see how prepared Robyn was for anal. We started with Robyn on her back and Sam on top in a 69 position. I helped Sam eat Robyn’s gorgeous pussy and Robyn sucked on the dildo while fingering Sam. They both came. I had gotten a lot better at reading Robyn. With the right stimulation she could cum over and over again. Lucky girl. “Oh yeah, suck my rubber dickey, Mommy. Finger my hot little pussy!”

Next I laid down on my back and Robyn mounted me, cowgirl style. I loved the feeling of sinking my cock balls deep in her hot, wet cunt. We kissed for a little bit and then I started kissing, licking and sucking on her wonderful titties. Sam was licking Robyn’s asshole and lubing it up with spit. She could only get two of her fingers in before Robyn felt uncomfortable. “We need to work on your ass, Mommy. I’ve got some training aids Daddy bought me back home. I wonder how you’d look with a tail!” Pretty damn good, I thought. “Okay, here it comes. Relax and let your little girl slide her dick into your pretty little asshole!” Hearing her talk like that was such a turn-on.

“Oh, yes. Okay. That’s good. I can take that. It feels good!” Robyn was learning that anal could be fun if done right. I got the feeling that someone had hurt her when she was younger and she had avoided it since. “I want you to train my ass, Sam. Help me prepare. I want to feel your Daddy’s hard cock in there!”

Robyn came again and it pushed me over the edge. I filled her sweet pussy up again. Sam didn't mind anymore since she enjoyed her cream pies so much. Ruth was watching and fucking herself hard with two fingers. She started to shake and I think she had an orgasm. I don't know if it was her first one or not, but it did seem to surprise her. She didn't say anything and neither of the girls noticed. I caught Ruth's eye and smiled. She smiled back and brought her fingers up to her face and smelled them. Then she started licking her juice off and suddenly I was getting hard again.

"Looks like I get to go for a ride too!" Sam said, unstrapping. She detached the dildo and gave it to Robyn. The harness was too small to fit her, barely. "Care to take care of my other hole, Mommy?" Then she climbed on top of me reverse cowgirl and slid on. She rode me for a little bit but Robyn couldn't get the dildo in with all of her bouncing. She lifted herself up and stayed still while I started to pump her from underneath. Robyn slid the dildo in and started to fuck her ass with it. Robyn's titties were hanging down right above my head and I was in heaven. God! I loved her tits! Sam came pretty soon and climbed off of me. "Want to share a lollipop with me, Mommy. But can I have the treat at the end?" she asked, hopefully.

"Sure thing, Sammy. Let me show you a few tricks first." Robyn used her considerable oral talents on me while giving Sam some pointers. Sam was learning fast and I was happy that her technique was improving. That was always a good thing! "I can't believe how much of his cock you can take, Sammy! You can almost deep throat him! How can you do that?"

Sam stopped sucking and started just stroking me. "I've been training for a while. I could only go about half way down when I started. It just takes time and determination. My goal is for him to be able to fuck my throat. Beth can do that already!" She started sucking again while Robyn started licking my balls and using her hand to play with my nipples. I couldn't hold it anymore and I came, my cock erupting, my man juice shooting right down Sam's throat. "Ahhhh."

she said when she finished draining me. “Good to the last drop!” Sam and Robyn embraced and kissed. Then they leaned down and we all shared a long, wet three-way kiss. When I looked over Ruth was still watching, attentively. I felt like a lab animal being studied. She was a bright cookie and I was looking forward to see her sexuality grow and mature.

“But wait!” Robyn said. “You promised to fuck my pussy, Sammy!” She laid on her back and brought her legs all the way up, behind her head. Damn! I love limber women! “Here you go! Fuck your Mommy, Sammy.” Sam quickly reattached the dildo and strapped it back on. She climbed up on top of Robyn and squatted down. She rubbed the dildo all over, like I do with my dick. Then she slid it in and started to fuck her. “Oh yes, Sammy. I love you. I love you so much!”

I just watched two of the most precious people in my life sharing such a sexy, intimate moment. Ruth was watching too, of course. I got up, walked over and sat down beside her. “Do you have any questions, Bino? I know this is all so new for you.”

“Your penis is so big. Can it fit in my pussy?”

“Not right now, it would hurt you a lot. Your pussy is very small still. It will grow bigger as you grow. In 4 or 5 years I would be able to fit it in without hurting you. It is possible to make your pussy bigger without it hurting. It takes time though. Sam did it to her pussy so I could put my penis in her without it hurting.”

“Could I do that too?” Oh Lord. I was going to be able to fuck an 8 year old in a few months.

“We need to talk to your Mommy. If she thinks it is okay then Sam will be able to help you.”

“Cool! I want to be able to fuck you, Daddy. I can see it makes you and Sam feel so good. It looks like a super-duper hug. I like hugs. They make me happy.”

“That is a very good way to describe it, Bino. A super-duper hug. Yes, if you do it with someone you love it does make both of you feel special and close to each other, like a hug.

“I’m cumming, Sammy. Yes! Make your Mommy cum Sammy! Make me cum! Ahhhhhh!” It was a wonderful finish to a wonderful night.

We all packed up and headed out early the next morning so we could get back home before dinner. Everyone agreed that it was a wonderful vacation. We all learned a lot about each other and became closer as a family. I was so happy. Life was good.

## Chapter 48: Happy Birthday to Us

Three days after we got back it was party time; a joint birthday party for Tyler and Ruth. Ruth was on board with the party at the fun center that Tyler had wanted. They shared most of the same friends. It was a zoo, as I expected with a bunch of 7 and 8 year old kids. They all had fun though. Most of the other kids didn't know Ruth was going to be there, since it was short notice. We didn't want her to be left out so Robyn and I surreptitiously gave out wrapped presents to the parents who hadn't brought anything for her. Ruth found out, of course. Instead of being mad she gave Robyn a big hug and said "Thank you Mommy. It wouldn't bother me to not get presents but I know the other kids would feel bad if they didn't have one for me. Besides, this way we both get to be surprised!" She was a treasure.

After dinner we had our own party back at the house for everyone, with cake and ice cream. We gave them our presents. After that they gave each other presents. Tyler gave Ruth a poster of her favorite movie for her room, which was almost ready. Ruth gave Tyler a card. He opened it and read it and a shocked look appeared on his face. "Really?" He asked. She nodded and they hugged. I had no idea what it said.

"Okay everyone. Time for bed!" Robyn said. "Don't forget your bath tonight Ruth."

"You too, Tyler." Jess said. "Big night tonight!" she said, grinning. She looked at me and winked as everyone headed out.

"What was that all about?" I asked Robyn as we were cleaning up. She just grabbed the card Tyler had dropped and handed it to me. I stopped and read. 'Tyler, My present for you is very special... it's ME. I want you to fuck me, Tyler. I want you to be my first. Ruth.' My jaw dropped and I looked at Robyn. "So I guess she told you she wanted to do that. Jess and Pete are okay with it too?"

“Yep. They’re quite excited, actually. Tyler and Ruth have always been so close. It just makes so much sense. Besides, Tyler is just her size. It’s going to be a while until her pussy and ass are going to be ready for you. Sam has started working with her though.”

“Really? So you decided to surprise me, eh? What if Tyler didn’t want to?”

“Seriously? Do you honestly think that could happen?” she laughed.

“No, I guess you’re right. He has a dick, little as it is, and he knows how to use it. Of course it would make this decision. It’s just how us guys work.”

“Let’s finish up and get ready to watch. Sam is going to take Ruth over there and then she is going to watch with Beth. I want you to fuck me just like Tyler fucks her. I want to share my little girls awakening.” This was going to be fun. We finished cleaning up and headed upstairs. I started to take off my clothes. “No, don’t. Wait until you see what they are wearing. I want to take off our clothes like they do.” Wow. She was really getting into this. I sat down next to her and gave her a kiss. “Thank you, Ro. I wasn’t sure about this... uhh, private family fun zone you guys have here. Now that I’m involved I see that it is based on love, not sex. Making love... sharing yourself with someone you care for. Why does that have to be reserved only for marriage? It makes sense somehow to share with everyone you love.” She gave me a kiss and rested her head on my shoulder.

Tyler walked into the room in his PJs. I had a shirt and pants on, so I guess we matched. He sat on his bed and looked down. I wondered what thoughts must be running through his head. There was a knock on the door. Ruth came in and sat down beside him on the bed. She was wearing the nightshirt she usually wore to bed. Robyn got up and switched into her nightshirt before sitting down on the bed next to me, just like the kids. Ruth looked kind of nervous. Tyler

looked at her and generally seemed a lot calmer. He'd done this quite a few times by now. "Hey Ruth. Check out some of the cool toys I got today. You got some cool stuff too. This one makes all kinds of noises." Soon they were playing with the toys.

"Why is he playing with toys? I mean, I know they're kids and that's what kids do. But now?" Robyn ask, mystified.

"He's not just playing with toys. He's distracting Ruth from what is making her nervous. I did that for Sam and Beth. Well, not playing with toys, but doing something completely different to help them relax. He's a smart boy."

"Yeah, he is. I hadn't considered that. Ruth knew what she was doing when she chose him." Tyler grabbed another toy, a remote control toy claw. He was moving it around, picking up different things. Then he used it to grab at his crotch.

"Ouch!" he said. "It bit me Ruth! I think I might be hurt. Can you look and see." He leaned back down so his crotch was accessible.

"That's so cute!" Robyn said. I leaned back like Tyler. "He made the first move, kind of. But she is the one in control."

"Okay Tyler." Ruth said. She started pulling down on his PJ bottoms. He lifted up his hips so it came off easier. Robyn did the same with my pants. "It looks okay, but I better check." Ruth leaned down to get a closer look and used her hand to pick it up and move it around. It looked like her first time holding a dick. Robyn was doing the same thing to me. I realized that I could fantasize that I was Tyler and that it was Ruth holding my dick instead of Robyn. I'm sure she was doing likewise. This was going to be fun. "Yup, it looks okay." Ruth said as she put his dick down.

"Well, it does still kind of hurt. If you kiss it than maybe it will feel better." 'Smooth move, Tyler.' I thought to myself. I'm sure that line has been used a bunch of times before.

“Okay. I’ll do that.” Ruth said. “But I think I got hurt here earlier.” she said, pointing at her pussy. “Can you kiss it while I kiss yours?” ‘And so it begins.’ I thought. A nice cute way for them to start experimenting sexually. Robyn pulled off her nightshirt just like Ruth did over there. I pulled off my shirt to match Tyler. Then Robyn climbed on top of my and put her pussy right over my face, like Ruth was doing to Tyler. I pictured Ruth’s little pussy in front of me and started munching away. I hoped I would be eating the real thing very soon.

They didn’t do that for very long. Maybe kids do have short attention spans these days. A couple of minutes later Ruth climbed off of Tyler and then turned around. She laid down on top of him. Then she kissed him. Really kissed him. Tyler’s had his tongue in Sam’s and Beth’s mouth enough times to know what to do. Ruth caught on quickly it seemed and they were kissing away for longer than the 69. I do love Robyn’s lips when we kiss. So soft and wonderful. When they finished kissing Ruth reached behind her and tried to position Tyler’s dick at her pussy. It was very awkward. She tried to get it in a couple of times and seemed to get frustrated. I was getting frustrated too as Robyn tried to match her. The end effect was a big tease for my cock. “Get up Ruth. Let me try a different way.” Tyler told her.

Soon Ruth was on her back with her legs up and Tyler was poking her little pussy with his little dick. I was doing the same to Robyn, of course. Soon we were both fucking our respective partners. Finally! It felt so good. “Your pussy feels very nice, Ruth. It’s just right. I’m so glad I am your first.”

“Me too, Tyler. I knew your penis would fit because Sam gave me a dildo that was the same size. It fit in my pussy just right and it felt really good. Just like your penis does now. It fit in my butt too! Do you want to put it in my butt Tyler?” This could prove difficult to duplicate since Robyn wasn’t ready for me yet.



“Not this time. We can do that next time. I think I’m gonna cum soon, but nothing comes out when I do. Did you cum yet?”

“I don’t think so. I’ve only had two orgasms, I think. This feels really good, but I haven’t had an orgasm yet.” Ruth lamented.

“How about if I do this?” Tyler said as he used his fingers to start rubbing her clit.

“Oh, Wow! That feels even better Tyler! Keep it up!” Ruth came about a minuted later and then Tyler came too. Robyn was so into it that she came less than ten seconds after Ruth. I took a little longer to match Tyler. Tyler and Ruth laid next to each other on the bed and kissed a little more. “Happy Birthday to Us!” Ruth said.

“Yeah!” Tyler agreed. “This is the best birthday party I ever had!” Both kids laughed and hugged. “I’m really glad you are Sam’s sister now. You live so close that we can see each other all of the time. Do you want to pretend marry me, Ruth?”

“Did Tyler just propose to my 8 year old daughter?” Robyn asked, smiling.

“He pretend proposed, I guess. Are you ready for a pretend son-in-law?”

“Yes, Tyler. I will pretend marry you.” Ruth said, happily. “Uh, what does that mean though?”

“It means we sleep in the same bed sometimes and have sex sometimes. And we can pretend that the puppies are our babies! Well, two of them. I want Patti to be my puppy. I’m even going to call her Patti, like Uncle J. How about you? Which puppy do you want to be our other baby?”

“That is soooooo cute!” Robyn said. “If I’m going to have a pretend son-in-law, I’m glad it is Tyler. He is a great little boy.”

“I want Buster to be my puppy. And I’m going to call him Buster, like Daddy. Give me a kiss, honey!” Ruth said, giggling. They kissed. “Okay, lets go to bed, dear.”

“Goodnight honey... honeybun.” They climbed under Tyler’s sheets, naked, and went to sleep in each other’s arms.

“Well if that wasn’t the cutest God Damn thing I ever saw!” I said. “How about you honey? Are you ready for bed?”

“I sure am, Dear. Don’t be surprised if you wake up with your dick in my mouth sometime tonight. I am still feeling a little horny.”

“I’m looking forward to it. It’s one of my favorite fantasies. And I hope you understand if you wake up with one your your titties in my mouth! I love you so much, Byn.”

## Chapter 49: Adult Swim

Pete and I worked on MiR for most of the following week. I had missed a couple of important events while on vacation, but I didn't regret it. My family was first. We planned our grand opening for July. We had 5 employees now and we needed to hire 3 more before we opened. I agreed to interview them so Pete could work on other stuff. I didn't mind.

"Hey Pete, I talked to Robyn and we're ready to complete my part of our bargain from last month."

"What the hell are you talking about, JR? I don't remember any kind of bargain."

"Well, it was kind of informal. 'Now you just have to get married so I can fuck your wife!' were your exact words, if I recall. I know we haven't gotten around to actually getting married yet, but that really doesn't matter, right?"

Pete laughed. "That was a joke, JR. I didn't mean it."

"Why are you looking up here? The joke is in your hand." I said, repeating the graffiti above the urinal in our bathroom at the shop. We all loved it so much we didn't erase it. We both laughed. "Nevertheless, it's going to happen. Robyn has heard about that talented tongue of yours and wants to take it for a test drive. I was thinking that us four adults need our own time and Robyn had the brilliant idea of using the pool. Adult Swim, we'll call it."

"That actually sounds pretty fun. If some neighborhood peeper gets a look it won't matter since there won't be any kids. How about Sunday nights, after we send the kids to bed?" he suggested.

"It's a date... Um, it's a pre-planned event." I joked. When I thought about it I realized it was a double date actually. "We did have

that group thing on your couch when Tyler and Beth first got together, so we've seen each other in action before. You're going to have a blast with Robyn. She's a little dynamo."

"I'm looking forward to it. Sunday it is."

Everyone was looking forward to Sunday. The kids all wanted to watch from their beds. We skipped movie night because I was having the home theater room redecorated. I put four recliners in back and just made the area in front one giant bed. That way the room could do double duty as a 'Party Room'. If the people making the custom fitted sheet and giant washable mattress pad had any questions about what we wanted that room for, they kept them to themselves.

Sunday rolled around and we were all excited for that night. The puppies were old enough to start weening and spending some time away from Layla. The kids all picked their favorite. Tyler and Ruth had already picked Patti and Buster. Ruth had jumped in line ahead of Sam because of her birthday, but Sam didn't care because she wanted Franz, whom she named Seamus. When I asked her why she said the only boy she ever had a crush on in West Virginia was named James. James didn't sound right for a dog so she chose the Irish version of the name. Beth chose Hans and named him Jaeger for almost the same reason. Like Sam she had a crush on a boy at school named Hunter. Jaeger is German for hunter. There was a lot more than meets the eyes to those two girls.

That left poor Velvet, who was the runt of the litter. Robyn adopted her and named her Shirley, after her mom. I guess her mom was the youngest and smallest in her family too. She was petite, with a build like Robyn's. But Shirley grew up to outshine all of her siblings. She was a fiercely independent woman who didn't let the world keep her down. Robyn had a feeling that Shirley the puppy would grow up the same way. With Robyn raising her I didn't doubt it for a minute. So we had four dogs in our house, all German Shepherds, and two more over at the other house. I didn't think any

thief would be stupid enough to rob us and I would actually feel sorry for anyone who tried.

Sam always slept in Beth's room Sunday nights and Ruth slept with Tyler. It was just easier Monday morning for school with them all over there. Robyn and I really enjoyed the peace and quiet in the morning, but we felt sorry for Jess. She said she didn't mind but we still decided we had to return the favor and host all of the kids sometimes so she and Pete could get some alone time as well.

We met at the pool at 9 PM. We took off our bathrobes and sat in the hot tub. At first we just talked about the events of the last week and plans for the coming week. Eventually Robyn and Jess were together and talking on one side. Pete and I were across from each other near the other end. After a little bit we noticed that the girls weren't talking anymore and we looked over. They were making out, kissing each other and starting to explore each other with their hands. Pete and I looked back at each other, chuckled and shook our heads. We weren't homophobic, but neither of us really had any interest that way. We traded sides and sandwiched our women. I was behind Jess and Pete was behind Robyn. I started to kiss Jess's neck and fondle her body. Eventually Robyn moved her head around Jess and started to kiss me while Jess and Pete did the same. It was like some choreographed erotic ballet.

Robyn and Jess went back to kissing each other and I pulled Jess's butt back towards me. I started to finger her while playing with her tits. Pete lifted Robyn up to sit on his lap and was playing with her titties from behind. I was already hard and I went right for Jess's ass. The water didn't make a perfect lube but her ass was easy enough to get into. I started fucking her from behind and still playing with her tits.

Robyn had reached forward and started playing with Jess's pussy on the other side. Jess had reached down and was playing with Pete's cock while he continued to finger Robyn. Soon Robyn raised herself up and slid Pete's cock into her oh-so gorgeous twat. After a few

minutes Jess grabbed Pete's face and brought it up to kiss him. "Fuck me Pete! Fill both of my holes." Pete and I looked at each other and shrugged.

"Ready to slap our balls together, buddy?" Pete asked me.

"What are friends for?" I replied. Pete pulled out of Robyn and came over toward us. I lifted Jess up so I was standing behind her with my dick in her ass. We were still in the hot tub and the buoyancy of the water made it easier to hold her up. I'd never done this before. I figured I could do this with Robyn and looked forward to trying it when she was ready for anal. Either of the girls would be easy to hold. I didn't know if I could hold Jess up outside of the tub. She was sexy and well-built, but taller and a little heavier. She was still a beautiful woman and a great fuck.

Pete came up and slipped his dick into his wife's pussy. We started easy and eventually built up a rhythm. Jess was sucking on Pete's tongue. I looked over and saw Robyn coming over beside up. She had only her head above water. Then I felt her hand at my butt and I felt her trying to stick a finger into my anus. From Pete's reaction I surmised she was doing the same to him with her other hand. I relaxed my sphincter enough for her to get it in and enjoyed her attention. I think she was trying to reach my prostate but couldn't quite reach it from that angle. I vowed to explore this again later with her when she could get better access. I never had my prostate milked but I heard some guys find it to be an incredible experience.

After about 10 minutes Robyn pulled out of us and swam over to the side. She climbed out and sat on the edge, opening her legs wide. "Okay Pete, time to show me what the tongue of yours can do!" We both pulled out of Jess and Pete swam over between her legs and started to defend his claim to fame. Jess and I climbed out of the tub on either side of Robyn. The colder air had turned her nipples into wonderful hard points and we both kneeled down and each took one in our mouth. Robyn then used her hands to stroke my dick and finger

Jess. “Oh my God, Pete. You really are the tongue master! You can munch my little coochie any time you want!”

Jess then climbed on top of Robyn and joined Pete at Robyn’s pussy. Robyn started eating Jess’s pussy and I moved behind her. First I licked her asshole a little and then joined Robyn for a minute or two, sharing some kisses. “Having fun Byn?”

“Oh yeah! Why haven’t we done this before? I think I’m really going to enjoy Adult Swim!” I positioned myself behind Jess and let Robyn work some of her mouth magic on me as I stuck a thumb in Jess’ ass and pinched her nipples with my other hand. Then Robyn positioned my cock at Jess’ pussy and I slid in balls deep as I keep my thumb in her butt. Robyn began to lick my balls but switched back to sucking Jess’ clit as my strokes got longer and faster. Pete had finished his dessert and brought his dick up for Jess to suck. Then he slid it into my bride to be and started kissing his wife again.

“I’m just about ready. Do you think we can all four reach it together?” Pete asked.

I was ready and both of the girls agreed. “30... 20...” I started counting down, slowly and quietly. “10... 9... 8... 7... 6... 5...” At five both Pete and I pulled out and started stroking. The girls started finger each others’ clits like mad and opened their mouths. “4... 3... 2... 1... Spooigify!” It wasn’t completely simultaneous, but we all let loose within 5 seconds of each other. I filled Robyn’s mouth with my cum as Pete did in Jess’.

A couple of seconds later Jess climbed off of Robyn and turned around. Robyn’s mouth was still open with my load in it. Jess dribbled Pete’s cum in. Robyn closed her mouth and swirled it all around with her tongue as she got up. Jess laid on the ground and Robyn then dribbled into her mouth. Pete and I were watching, transfixed. Jess then sat up and they both kissed, exchanging our combined man juice between them before each swallowed about half. How in the living fuck did they co-ordinate that!?! Did they plan it?

Was there a cum-swapping playbook that they used. I found out later that they had just read subtle cues from each other and apparently worked very well together. I had to agree.

“Mmmmm. That was delicious. Thanks for sharing, Jesse.” Robyn said. “I’m all hot now. Time for a swim.” She stood up, walked over and dived into the pool. We had underwater lights in the pool so I enjoyed looking at her naked body beneath her. I dived in as well and swam over to embrace her. “They are good people, Ro. Thank you for bringing us all together. I’m sure going to enjoy living here with all of you.”

“I think everyone feels the same way, Byn. I want to marry you as soon as we can. I know it is just a piece of paper, but I still want it. Give me a kiss my beautiful bride.”

We all talked afterwards, swimming in the pool and enjoying that post-fuck glow. Robyn and I decided on a destination wedding. We decided to make it a nice vacation for all of us. It would have to wait until June when school was out. We also had to be done by the grand opening for MiR. Pete and I decided that all of the really big stuff would be ready by then and that everyone else could worry about the little details. Those was their jobs after all.

We included the kids in the planning. Sam wanted to go to Disney World again but I told her I wasn’t going to Florida in the Summer. If I wanted to bake I could stay in Texas. We finally all agreed on Hawaii. People get married over there all the time and the weather is nice year round. We planned to do it on the beach. Some couples do it in front of a volcano but I thought that was just inviting disaster. Robyn and Jess agreed to take care of everything. In less than two months I was going to marry the most wonderful wife any man could hope for.



## Chapter 50: Fantastically Fun Family Fuck Fest

I had completely missed Beth's first vaginal sexual experience with Pete while I was with Robyn and Ruth. We watched the recording of it and it was beautiful. Robyn cried and told me how much she wished her first time was like that. It was so gentle and loving, an experience she would treasure for a lifetime. She wanted Ruth's first time with a grown man to be just as special and she wanted it to be with me. Her first time had not been pleasant and she wouldn't say anymore. I think she was raped and I wish I had the guy or guys who did it in front of me. I'm not a violent man but I was sure I'd mess them up good.

I asked Beth if she was ready to have her first vaginal sex experience with me. She said she wanted me to do it like I had done with Sam for her first anal experience and that she wanted to share the experience with everyone, to make it a real celebration. I had an idea about how to make it an event that would tie us all together as one big extended family. I asked Pete and Jess about it the following week while Robyn was out.

"Hey guys, I talked to Beth and she wants our first vaginal sexual experience together to be with everyone present, as kind of a celebration." I told them. "I think we could make it even more of a celebration and officially bring our families together."

"I think Beth's celebration idea is great. In what way do you want to use it to bring our families together?" Jess asked. "I'm not sure we could get any closer." she joked.

"Well, Sam and I just kind of grew closer and closer with you guys. It's great and I love it, but it did kind of just happen. Now Robyn and Ruth have joined Sam and me to make our own little family unit. Ruth and Tyler have bonded so much they pretend they are married. Robyn has joined all of our activities as well, but it has all just kind of happened." I tried to explain.

“So you want to do something more? Something formal?” Pete suggested.

“Yeah, kind of.” I tried to explain. “I want to build a big extended family with everyone in it. I figured we could start with Robyn and me kind of unofficially adopting Beth and Tyler, or something like that. I will be with Beth for our first time. Then Robyn can be with Tyler, since they haven’t before.”

“I like it except for the adopting part. That doesn’t sound right. Although none of us are religious, I think Godparents would be the most appropriate way to express it. If Pete and I get eaten by tigers or something, I would want you guys to raise Beth and Tyler in our stead.”

“And I’m sure Robyn would agree that we would want you guys to raise Sam and Ruth. We can put that in our wills. I would still like some kind of event for the family. Something that acknowledges it.”

We talked about it more and planed the event. The home theater room was done and the huge bed in there seemed an ideal place. The mattress wasn’t made for sleeping but for lounging in front of the movie screen. It was also good for fucking. It was firm and would provide good support for all kinds of fun activities. We decided to do it on movie night, in lieu of the movie.

We didn’t tell Beth or Tyler about the joining of our families. Pete and Jess didn’t think they would have any problem with it and they liked the idea of surprising them. Robyn loved the idea. We had talked about doing something similar before. Sam and Ruth were fully behind it too. Beth knew she and I were going to have sex while everyone was with us on Friday, she just didn’t know about the rest. We had a big dinner together on Friday. Everyone was excited and ready for the evening activity later.

We all went down to the theater later and Sam said she has something special for us to watch. She had made up a slide show with scenes of everything our extended family had done together since Sam and I had first arrived. There were a lot of pictures from cell phones, include a couple that Sam and Beth had made before our Disney trip. Only Beth, Sam and I had seen them before and everyone got a kick out of them.

There were also a lot of shots the cameras mounted around the houses had recorded. She didn't make it pornographic with lots of sex scenes. Most showed us laughing and having a good time before or after, even during. The pictures showed the loving way everyone treated each other. We were watching with Beth sitting on my lap in one of the chairs in the back. Jess and Pete were sitting together, as were Sam and Robyn, Ruth and Tyler. About halfway through when Beth was fully relaxed and distracted I began to undress us, slowly. Everyone else started to do the same.

The last slide showed Beth and I together, laughing out by the pool. While it was still on the screen I move Beth out near the middle and sat down with her on my lap, facing me. Sam turned off the screen and Beth turned to look at me. I could feel her starting to get nervous. I just gave her a hug and held her for a couple of minutes.

I looked into her eyes and began to talk softly to her as I continued to hold her. The room was silent so everyone else could hear as well. "You have become very important to me in the short time I've known you, SweetB. As soon as you met her you brought Sam into your life and then into your heart. You quickly learned how special Sam's relationship with me was and you want to have a relationship like that too, with your father. The fact that such a wonderful, intelligent and loving girl as you chose to include me as well made me feel very special too. I am thankful everyday to have you in my life. I love you, SweetB, and that will never change."

There were many wet eyes, including mine. Beth continued and made the moment even more emotional. "You are very important to

me as well, K-Bear. I always knew how much Mom and Dad loved me. When I met Sam and learned about how much you two loved each other I realized that love is not limited. I learned that I could love you and let you love me without loving them any less. You helped me expand my sexual horizons in a gentle and loving way and prepared me for the ultimate physical expression of love with my Dad. Now I want to share it with you, to bring that to our relationship. I love you, K-Bear, and I always will.”

We embraced again and I felt her relax in my arms, giving herself completely to me. Once again I looked at her and asked her “Are you ready for this? Are you ready to share yourself with me completely?”

“Yes. With all of my heart. I want to join with you. I want to be one with you. I want you to be part of me, to be inside of me. Make love to me K-Bear.” I kissed her full on the lips as my hands started to rub and caress her back. I started to kiss her cheek, her ears, her neck. I worked my mouth down to her absolutely fabulous tiny little tits. They had grown a little more and were developing quickly. She had apparently inherited Jess’ long, firm nipples. I began to suck on them as she laid her head back and started to moan.

I was starting to get hard and my cock was still underneath her ass. She reached down and pulled it up so it was in front of her pussy, right between us. She started to stoke it with one hand as she caressed my cheek with the other. Then she moved her hand down to start playing with my nipples, which hardened my cock even more. Then she slid herself back a little so she could rub the head of my cock on her vulva, which was getting very wet. I leaned back and put my hands out behind me so she had room to work.

I looked around and saw that the others were beginning to kiss and fondle each other as well, adding to the sexual arousal in the room. “I’m ready for you, K-Bear. Hold me.” she said. I leaned back up and wrapped my arms around her. We embraced, my cock sandwiched between my abdomen and her very warm and wet pussy. She lifted herself up until she cleared my cock and put one of her arms

around behind her to line it up at her opening. Then she eased herself down. The tip of my cock contacted her outer labia and she gasped. She kept lowering down slowly and it began to press in. Then it popped in and she gasped once again.

I kissed her and she pushed her tongue in, penetrating my mouth even as I penetrated her more and more as she lowered herself down. Finally I bottomed out, completely inside. We broke our kiss and looked at each other once again. “You are completely inside of me, K-Bear. We are joined. We are one. Thank you for introducing me to the joy and ecstasy of sex. The world believes I am not old and wise enough for this, but I am. I know what we are doing and what it means. What it means to me right now is that I love you more than I could express any other way.”

“Thank you, SweetB, for letting me into your life and letting me into you. Robyn and I have decided that we need to tell you and show you how important you are to us. We want you to be part of our family.” I said.

“And we want Tyler to be part of our family as well.” Robyn said as she slid over next to me. She leaned back and opened her legs, exposing herself to Tyler, who was sitting right in front of her. “Tyler, I would like you to come here and have sex with me, just as your sister is with Ro. We want you to be in our family, just as I want you to be inside of me.” Ruth had been sucking Tyler’s dick and he was fully hard. He didn’t move. He looked like he didn’t know what to do.

“Jon and Robyn want to be Godparents to you and Beth, Tyler.” Jess explained to him. “Your Dad and I will always be your parents, of course. They are not replacing us. They are just opening themselves and their family to you and Beth. They want you to know that they will always be there for you, just as your Dad and I are. If there is anything either of you need, they will provide it to you just like they do for Sam and Ruth.”

“Oh. Okay Mommy. I like this. I will like being in their family, with Ruth and Sam.” He got up and walked over between Robyn’s legs. There wasn’t any hesitation. He just got down on his knees, grabbed his dick, leaned over and pushed it into Robyn. Everyone else was beaming. Then he started pumping in and out of her. He even leaned down and started sucking on her tits. She put her hands down behind his ass and helped him thrust into her.

At the same time as Tyler was mounting my fiance, Beth agreed with Tyler’s enthusiasm. “Oh, this is wonderful! Of course I’m happy to be part of your family K-Bear, with Robyn, Miss and Ruth. Fuck me, Godfather! Fuck your little girl!” She started to move forward and back, sliding her pussy back and forth on my dick. It felt so good. Like Sam, she was very tight. Just amazing. I began to suck on those titties more and more. Pete and Jess had started fucking as they watched, turned on by there kids fucking with their best friends.

Ruth and Sam got up and came over as well. Sam had strapped on a dildo. She kneeled next to Beth and I, leaned in and shared a three-way kiss with up. Ruth had gone over and was kissing Tyler as well. “Ruth and I want to welcome you to our family as well, Sibs and Tyger. We are going to join you guys, if it is okay.”

Tyler nodded and Beth kissed Sam. “Of course it is okay, Miss. This will make you my Sister for real, kind of. And Ruth too. I love you guys so much. Fuck me Miss, join K-Bear in making me part of your family.” Sam kissed Beth quickly one more time before getting up and getting in position behind her. I laid myself all the way back and Beth leaned down on top of me, exposing her ass fully to Sam. Sam licked Beth’s asshole and spit into it, using a finger to lube it up. Then she spit in her hand again and rubbed it on the dildo. She put the tip on her asshole and started to push in.

“Are you ready Sibs? Are you ready for me to fuck your ass while Daddy fucks your sweet little pussy?”

“Yes! Yes! Fuck me. Fuck your sister in the ass!” Beth begged. Sam pushed all the way in and Beth started moving forward and back with my cock sliding in and out of her pussy and Sam’s strap-on dildo sliding in and out of her ass. It was apparently her first DP. “Oh God, this is good. Twice the feeling! Wow. This is amazing!”

Ruth had stopped kissing Tyler and had gone around to start licking his asshole. I guess this wasn’t the first time she had done this. Tyler seemed to be enjoying it. “Yes Ruth! Lick your husbands asshole while he fucks your Mommy. Help me fuck him and make him part of our family.” Robyn said, accepting their pretend marriage as a fact. Eventually Ruth stopped and came back around to stand over Robyn. Tyler leaned down and started to eat her pussy while Robyn started to lick her ass. I don’t think Robyn had ever done anything with Ruth before. Another first for the night.

After a few more minutes Pete and Jess came over. “Can we join in?” Pete asked. “We are all going to be one big extended family now.” Everyone wanted them to join in. It wasn’t part of the original plan, but we had only planned up until Sam and Ruth joined in. Pete stood beside me and pointed his cock at Beth. “How about it, BB. Want your Dad to make you airtight?”

“Uhhh. If that means do I want to suck your dick, Daddy, then hell yeah! Gimme, gimme.” She leaned down and engulfed Pete’s cock in her mouth. I got to watch her work from up close, closer than I can see when she is sucking my cock. She really was amazing for an 11 year old girl.

I looked over and saw that Robyn was even watching Beth appreciatively. Then Jess leaned down over her and draped her tits in Robyn’s face, who immediately began to suck on them. Jess started to lick Ruth’s pussy while Tyler licked her ass.

Tyler came soon after and pulled out of Robyn. He came over and kissed Sam. “I’m happy I am your brother, Sam. You don’t have

any other brother so I'll be sure to look out for my big sister." Then he leaned over and kissed Beth. "You're my first sister Beth and I love you super duper much. Now we have another sister and I'm so excited."

"But Ruth is your sister now too, Ty." Beth reminded him.

"No. Ruth is my wife. We're married, remember." So fucking cute. Ruth walked over next to Tyler. Then she leaned down and started kissing Beth. Tyler joined in and they had a nice little three-way kiss.

"Welcome to our family, Beth" Ruth said when they finished. "You were my sister-in-law, but now you're my sister too. I'm so happy to be part of this wonderful big family.

Robyn got up and crawled over to kiss me. Pete had pulled out of Beth's mouth when Tyler came over so he kneeled behind Robyn and started to fuck her from behind. Jess laid down under Pete and began to lick his balls and give him a rimjob at the same time.

Sam pulled out of Beth and walked over behind Jess. She kneeled down between her legs and slid her dildo into Jess' pussy. She started to fuck Jess while she leaned down to help her lick Pete's asshole. "Oh God! That's good girls. Two tongues in my ass!"

"It's an awesome feeling, isn't it Pete?" I asked him rhetorically. "Byn did that for me with a couple of her stripper friends last month. I never thought I'd be able to feel that again, but maybe I can." Pete soon let loose and filled up Robyn's pussy. Sam got herself another cream pie.

Robyn finished kissing me and went up to join Tyler, Beth and Ruth's kiss. Then she whispered something in Ruth's ear and Ruth nodded to her. Ruth then kneeled down and kissed me, harder than she ever had before. She stopped and then looked at my face. "I want



you to eat my pussy, Daddy. Tyler, Mommy and Sam have. It's your turn."

"Of course, Bino. I would love to lick your beautiful little pussy. I bet it's yummy!" She stood over top of me and squatted down, almost like she was peeing. What a wonderful sight before my eyes. An eight year old's pussy. I had never seen one right up close before. I'd never seen a ten year old's pussy before Sam. There were subtle difference. Ruth's pussy was a little smaller and a little less developed. It was so nice to look at. Now it was time to see how good it tasted.

My tongue started to flick around it, but I didn't get as much reaction as I do from Sam and Beth. Ruth seems to be more reserved. She just doesn't seem to express her pleasure as much. People are different, little girls included. I had to work at it pretty hard but I did get her to cum eventually. I was looking forward to many more years of eating this wonderful little pussy.

Beth and I hadn't changed positions at all, I was still laying down and my dick had been inside of her the whole time. Finally she turned around into a reverse cowgirl, brought her feet in closer and got up into a squatting position above me. Then she started to bounce up and down on my dick. "How is this K-Bear. How does it feel to have me pounding up and down on your dick?"

"It is incredible, SweetB. You're going to make me cum soon!"

"Not until I'm done!" Sam said. She had pulled off her strap-on. She hadn't cum either, I realized. She squatted down on top of me, wanting me to get her off. She leaned forward and put her arms around Beth. One hand went down to rub her clit and the other was pinching her nipples. "How's that Sibs? I'm going to make my sister cum!" I was using my tongue and hands on Sam and it didn't take long for me to get her there. "Yes, Daddy. That's it! I'm going to cum! Oh yeah. I'm cumming!"

“Me too, Sis! Oh, yes. I’m cumming to!”

Feeling Beth’s orgasm on my dick was sending me to the edge as well. “Oh girls! I’m going to cum too. Oh, here it cums. It’s cumming!” I was almost there. Both Sam and Beth climbed off of me. I hoped they weren’t going to fight over it.

“Come on, Jess.” Robyn said. “All hands on deck.” She came over and Jess followed.

“Don’t you mean all tongues on dick?” Sam said, before leaning in. All four girls surrounded my dick with their open mouths. Sam was stroking my dick. As far as ejaculations go, it was pretty good, but not near my best. All four tongues collected it, though. When they had squeezed everything out of me they could they started kissing each other and spreading it all around. Then they all swallowed and kissed again. Wow!

We collapsed and just lay there, cuddling all together in one giant sweaty pile. We all got up then, put on robes and headed out to the pool. We used the outdoor showers to rinse off the sweat and then took a late night swim, a big family all skinny dipping together. When we’d had enough we showered off the chlorine and went to bed. Tyler slept with Ruth in her room, which was just finished earlier in the week. Beth slept with Pete and Jess. Sam slept with Robyn and me. I slept very well that night.

## **Chapter 51: The Wedding**

If you’ve never been to Hawaii I would highly recommend it. It’s expensive, but even a short trip will leave you with some wonderful memories. We flew business class as I always do, but I bumped up Pete and Jess to first class. They have done so much for us I wanted them to feel special for once. Sam had only ever flown on the flight up to Wyoming and she thought this was a lot better. She

liked the wide-body plane, and the fact Beth was there too. Beth and Tyler had flown, but they were still excited. Robyn and Ruth had never been on a plane so they were both nervous and excited.

It isn't easy to join the mile-high club these days. Mountains in Colorado don't really count. A plane is the only way. Two adults using a bathroom at the same time is not allowed. We were able to get around it by pairing one adult and one child. Bathrooms on planes are scary and nobody will stop a parent going in with a scared child. I did it with Sam, Robyn with Ruth, Pete with Beth, and Jess with Tyler. Using different bathrooms and spreading it out over the long trip helped. Back home we had already started a chart to keep track who had sex in what states. I was way in the lead. We all got to check off Hawaii.

We had rented a whole house out away from the typical touristy area. We rented two cars so we could split up exploring; one van and one sedan. We used a wedding provider recommended by someone Pete worked with at Dell. It was a beautiful ceremony the second day we were there, at sunset. We got some awesome pictures with the sun behind us. We dressed in typical tourist clothes, simple and fitting for the venue.

Robyn and I had the master suite at the house we rented. We planned to celebrate our honeymoon by including everyone else, one person at a time. Robyn and I were alone for the first three nights. We started with Champagne in the big hot tub, re-creating the first time we had sex. We tried everything we could think of, including recreating the time we just masturbated near each other. Those memories were nice. She even got me to cum from stimulating my prostate. I understand not every guy can do it. I'm glad I can. It was very different and very enjoyable.

Sam was the first person to join us. She wanted to act out a fantasy. We pretended we were a typical non-incestuous family. It started with Robyn hearing noises from Sam's bedroom and peeking in to see Sam masturbating. Robyn got turned on and started to

masturbate herself while watching. “Oh yes Daddy! Fuck me Daddy. Ahhhh!” Sam said when she finished. Robyn was so turned on she came back to bed and started to suck my dick while I was sleeping. I woke up and started to play with her pussy, already wet from her arousal.

“What if you woke up and it was Sam sucking your dick instead of me, dear?” she asked me.

“Ooo. I like it. ‘Sam, what are you doing?’ I say when I realize it is her”.

“‘I’ve wanted to see what your dick was like for a few months, Daddy. I saw it uncovered when I walked by and I just had to try it. Don’t be mad, Daddy.’ she tells you.”

“‘I’m not mad, Baby Girl. It’s only natural for a girl to think about having sex with her Daddy at some point in her life.’ I tell her. I reach out and comb her hair with my fingers. ‘You can keep going if you want to.’”

“So it really is okay, Daddy?” The real Sam asks as she walks in, continuing the fantasy. “I really do want to try it. Can I?”

I look up at Robyn. “You started this. I’m okay with it. What do you think?” I ask Robyn.

“It is really hot!” she says looking at me as if she is still making up her mind. Then she appears to make her decision. “Okay Sam. If you really want to. Come here and let me show you how.” Sam comes over and climbs up into bed. “Go ahead and hold it like I am and stroke it up and down.” Sam does and somehow it feels even better than normal. I guess the excitement of the fantasy is making me feel like it is the first time again.

“It feels so funny, Mommy,” Sam says. “but I really like the way it feels.”

“Okay, now lick it. That’s it, up and down the shaft. Now lick the head. That is the most sensitive part of a penis. Okay, now stick it in your mouth and suck on it.” Sam does, but she just sucks and doesn’t move her head up and down. Just like when she first did it at Disney World. “Okay, you’re doing great Babe. Let Mommy show you how she does it.” Sam let Robyn have my dick and she started to give me one of her wonderful blow jobs. Using her hand below in sync with her mouth above. Her gorgeous full lips just added to the feeling.

“Okay Mommy. I think I have got it. Let me try again.” This time Sam did a much better job, like she usually does. Robyn let Sam continue and came up to kiss me. We were both so turned on. I could see in her eyes just how much she was enjoying it.

“Alright Sam, time for Daddy to cum. Your Daddy just loves it when I lick and suck on his nipples. Come on up and join me.” Sam began to lick one of my nipples and Robyn licked the other one. She was right, I really did like this. “And now we give him a hand job at the same time to finish him off. Here, let me show you.” Robyn reached down and started to stroke my cock. Then Sam did. I was getting ready to cum and Robyn noticed. “Okay, keep going. He’s about to cum. Keep licking.” I finally came, my jizz shooting all over. “Look sweetie! See Daddy’s cum shooting out of his cock.”

“Wow Mommy. It’s all white and sticky.” Sam said, after I finished cumming, playing with it between her fingers.

“And it tastes good too!” Robyn said as she wipe some up on a finger and licked it off. Sam licked it off of her fingers, then cleaned up the rest. “Okay sweetheart, now it’s time to show you how to eat pussy. Come over here and climb on Mommy.” Sam climbed up and looked at Robyn’s wet twat below her. “Daddy will teach you how while I see how good your little pussy tastes.”

“Watch what I do Sam, then it is your turn.” I started licking and sucking Robyn, using my fingers to open her up and lick deep inside. “Okay, try and do what I did to start, then just try anything you want. You’ll be able to feel Mommy’s reaction to tell how much she likes what you are doing. I’m going to go give you a special treat now.” I went back around and after kissing Robyn I spread Sam’s cheeks and started to eat her ass.

“Daddy! You’re licking my asshole!” Sam said loudly, pretending she was shocked. “Oh, that does feel good though. Don’t stop.” She went back to eating Robyn for a few minutes, then she upped the ante. “Hey Daddy, if your tongue can fit in there, can your dick fit in too?” That’s my girl.

“Let’s find out!” I said as I brought my dick up. It was firm but I let Robyn suck on it a bit to make it nice and hard. Then I spread Sam’s cheeks and put my cock the entrance to her wonderful little ass. “Okay sweetie. I’m going to put it in. Tell me if it hurts.” I slowly push my cock in. She only moans. I push all the way and then start fucking her.

“Keep going Sam. Mommy’s going to cum!” Robyn said.

“Oh Mommy. You’re tongue is wonderful. And Daddy’s dick feels so good in my ass. I’m cumming too!”

“Oh yes! Me too. I’m cumming too.” I said as I filled Sam’s ass. “Ah, that was really nice.” I pulled out and put my dick down for Robyn to clean. “Don’t move, sweetie.” I told Sam when she started to climb off. “Mommy’s got to get her treat first.” I went around and kissed Sam while Robyn ate my cum out of her ass.

“Wow Sam.” Robyn said when she finished. “You’ve got a way with fantasies and stories. That really turned me on.” We all took a shower together, which was tougher to do with the small shower, but we managed. We went to sleep holding each other, Robyn and I hugging Sam between us.

The next night we spent with Ruth. So far I had only kissed Ruth and ate her pussy. I know Robyn had done more, and Tyler has done everything with her. I wasn't sure what she was going to do. We all got ready for bed together and climbed in, Ruth between Robyn and me. "I love you very much, Bino. Are you happy that I'm your Daddy officially now?"

"Oh yes, Daddy. But you've been my Daddy for a while now. I'm glad you and Mommy got married, though. And I'm super glad that Sam is my sister. She's a great sister."

"That's so great sweetie." Robyn told her. "We all love you very much. Do you know why you're here sleeping with us tonight instead of Tyler?"

"Yeah. You and Daddy are spending the night with all of us to show us how special we are to you. And to have sex and do things like that."

"But you know you don't have to do anything you don't want to, Bino. We love you no matter what you do. We just want you to know that you can feel free to explore your sexuality in any way you want, as long as it is only with people in the family. We don't want anyone outside to know."

"I know, Daddy. For right now I just want to watch you and Mommy. I want to see you do everything."

Robyn and I looked at each other and shrugged. "Okay sweetie." Robyn said. "Why don't you tell us what to do? You be the director of a movie and we are the actors. You can tell us what to do, and we'll do it."

"That sound's great, Mommy. I get to be in charge. Okay, I want you to kiss Daddy." Ruth climbed over Robin and leaned up against the headboard. Robyn crawled over to me and we started to kiss. It

was a turn-on to be controlled, like we were toys that Ruth was playing with. “Okay. Stop kissing. Now I want you to suck on Daddy’s dick.” Robyn kissed her way down my chest and sucked my rapidly hardening dick into her mouth. She started slow but got more and more into it. Ruth had spread her legs and was starting to play with herself.

“Now I want you to eat Mommy’s pussy, Daddy. And Mommy, you can eat my pussy.” Robyn crawled up to Ruth and started to lick her sweet little, precious pussy, as I turned around, lifted Robyn’s ass in the air and started to eat her out from behind. “That feels really good, Mommy. Now I want Daddy to eat my pussy while you sit on Daddy’s dick.” I was liking this. I laid down and Robyn mounted me, cowgirl style and slid my cock in. She started riding me, sliding up and down, as Ruth squatted over my face and spread her pussy wide. My God, but it was so good. I loved the feeling to sticking my tongue in. I had to push it in to get deep, her pussy was so tight. Ruth and Robyn started to kiss above me.

“Okay, now I want Mommy to suck Daddy’s dick again, but I want to watch up close.” Robyn slid off of me and laid down, her head over my cock. Ruth climbed off and laid down on the other side of me, very close. Robyn once again started to suck me, but she was doing it like a beginner, a very basic job. I think she guessed that Ruth wanted to try next. I was so looking forward to her eight year old mouth trying to fit my dick inside of it. Sure enough, after a few minutes Ruth wanted to try. “Okay Mommy. My turn.”

Robyn stopped and bent my hard cock over to Ruth. “This is your first time sucking an adult dick, sweetie. Take it slow. You’re not going to be able to do it like me.”

“I know, Mommy. I just want to try and see what it is like.” She bent over and started by licking it. Then she kissed it all over. Finally she put her mouth up to it and started to pull it. It didn’t feel as good as the other girls, but the sexy view and knowledge that she was only eight more than made up for that. It was wonderful. She couldn’t take



me very far in, but she did start bobbing up and down without any prompting from Robyn. She also stroked my dick with her hands. She was a quick learner and a good study.

“That feels wonderful, Bino. You can suck on Daddy’s dick any time you want!”

“Thank you, Daddy.” she said, taking a break. “I’ve been watching Mommy, AJ, Sam and Beth do it for a while. They all like doing it, so I wanted to try. It’s so much bigger than Tyler’s. I can fit all of his in.” She went back to sucking for a while as Robyn came up and kissed me. She was rubbing her pussy and I used a hand to help. “I want you to lick my pussy again Mommy. And my ass. You can put a finger in too. Sam has helped me get big enough.” She went back to sucking my dick as Robyn crawled over and started to finger-bang her daughter. She positioned her pussy up by my face so I could eat her out too. We were doing a three-way oral triangle. Ruth noticed. “Hey look. We are all licking and sucking each other! It’s a sex circle!”

“We can add more people later, Bino. When we get back home we can make a long chain.” I promised her.

“That will be fun. Okay, I want Daddy to eat me now. You can put your fingers in too, Daddy. I want you to make me cum.” Another order I was more than happy to follow. She climbed up on top of me and kept sucking my dick. Robyn joined her and started to lick my balls. It was so fun to finger-band my eight year old daughter. Her pussy was tight around my finger. Her ass was a little looser but she liked to tighten it up from time to time, like she wanted to pull my finger off.

“I’m going to give Daddy a special treat, sweetie.” Robyn said as she started to lift up my legs. Soon she was able to start licking my ass. Wow! I was going to town on Ruth’s pussy, fucking her faster and faster with my finger while my tongue started on her clit. She started to cum and Robyn moved up to hold her. “Oh my sweet little

girl. Let Mommy hold you while Daddy makes you cum.” She hugged Ruth tight as she started to shake and shudder, experiencing a very powerful orgasm. It lasted longer than I thought it would. “How was that, sweetie?” Robyn asked her when she was finished.

“Wow Mommy! That was great. I’ve never felt that good before. It was even better with you holding me. A super-duper hug in my pussy and a big hug from Mommy at the same time!” She just sat there breathing hard for a while. My finger was still in her cunt and I slowly pulled it out. She shook a little bit, still sensitive I guess. “Thank you so much Daddy. You are the best. I can’t wait until I’m big enough for you to put your penis in there. And in my ass!”

“I’m really looking forward to that too, dear. But take your time. That is something you don’t want to rush. We don’t want you to injure yourself.”

“Okay Daddy. Now it is your turn to cum. I want to try what Mommy was doing. I want to lick your ass while Mommy sucks your dick and makes you cum.” This was just getting better and better. They switched places and Robyn pulled my legs back up. She settled herself on top of my face and I proceeded to use my fingers and tongue to make sure she was able to cum too. Then she started to suck my dick. “Ready Daddy? Here I come!” Ruth said.

“I’m ready, Bino. Lick Daddy’s ass!” She started by licking my balls, like Robyn had. At the same time she used her fingers to start playing with my ass. Such tiny fingers playing with my ass was a very unique feeling, different than anything I have ever experienced. She tried to push her finger in and I relaxed as much as I could so she should get it in. “Wow! You’re fingering your Daddy’s ass! You are such and dirty little girl and Daddy loves you so much for it.”

“Not dirty bad, sweetie.” Robyn said. I guess Ruth hadn’t understood what I meant. “Daddy means you’re doing things that most girls don’t do, and he really likes it. He means that you are a very special girl.”

“Yeah, Bino. Keep going. You are an amazing little girl and I’m so happy you are here with us!” That seemed to do the trick and she went back to fingering my ass and licking my balls. She moved down to my taint and then started to lick my anus after pulling her finger out. She had watched Robyn and copied her, swirling her tongue all around and pushing it in a little. An eight year old girl was giving me a rimjob! It was enough to push me over. Robyn started to shudder too, apparently as turned on as I was. “Oh yes! Here it comes. I’m cumming!”

Robyn stopped sucking and started stroking me, coaxing out my load. “He’s cumming sweetie. Watch it shoot out!” she told Ruth. Ruth stopped licking me, but I was already there. My first shot must have been huge because I heard Ruth gasp. Robyn kept going until I was empty, utterly satisfied. “This is Daddy’s cum. This is what comes out of older boys. If they cum in a girls pussy the girl can become pregnant. That’s how babies are made. Daddy’s cum can’t do that though, he had an operation so he can’t make babies anymore.” Robyn was using the opportunity to do some sex ed at the same time. “Some girls think it tastes good.” she said before licking it off of her hand. “Do you want to try it?”

“Okay. I’ve seen all of you eat it lots of times. I have been wanting to try it.” She wiped some up with her little finger and stuck it straight in her mouth, no hesitation. Then she did it again, and again. Soon she was licking it directly off of me. I guess she liked it. “Next time Daddy cums I want him to do it right in my mouth so I can swallow it. I think it tastes good too.”

“Wow, that was so much fun, girls.” I said, sitting up. “How about a bath before bed?” Ruth said she wanted to shower with us instead of a bath, so we all showered together and went to sleep. It was another awesome night.

Pete joined us the next night and I was a little nervous. I think he was as well. We’d had a couple of foursomes and an eight-some even,

but this was our first threesome. Robyn would get all of the attention. We didn't try anything too fancy. We started with oral, then a spit roast and lastly with some ball-slapping DP. We finished with Robyn kneeling between us and getting a little cum shower. We showered separately with Robyn joining each of us. I think Robyn was secretly hoping we would get a little more adventuresome but I wasn't really interested and neither was Pete. We slept with Robyn between us and Pete and I successfully avoided each other all night.

The next night with Jess was a lot of fun. I let the girls just go at each other all night and did my own thing, plugging whatever hole looked good at the time. They made each other cum a bunch of times. I think they will probably spend a lot of nights together in the future, embracing their lesbian sides. We finished with a double BJ and they shared my load so many times I lost count. We started the shower together but I left early as they seemed to only want to be with each other. They included me when we went to sleep, sandwiching me with a juicy twat snuggling each of my legs. When we woke up in the morning they were cuddling together and I was alone on the other side of the bed. I wasn't jealous. It was nice that they had each other to satisfy those needs.

Tyler wasn't very exciting for me. It was mostly him and Robyn doing lots of different things. We did do a DP once. Robyn was on top of me and I was in her ass while Tyler fucked her pussy and played with her titties. I just came in her pussy while she sucked Tyler off. When it was done he took a bath and we showered. Then Robyn snuggled with Tyler while I was alone again for most of the night.

The last night was with Beth. She was really excited and brought her strap-on, as well as one that would fit Robyn. They both got DP'd a bunch of times. Beth also liked Robyn fucking her pussy and using a dildo in her ass while she sucked me off. She liked being air-tight, I guess. The highlight of the night was a blow-job contest. I had already cum twice and they wanted to see who could make me cum a third time. Beth won when she laid on her back with her head over the edge of the bed so I could throat-fuck her. Robyn was fucking her

with a strap-on while she watched, amazed that Beth could do that. The sight of her throat bulging with each stroke of my cock was such a turn on it made me cum for a third time. Robyn declared her the BJ champion. We even had a trophy made up later. It was a golden open mouth that was originally made for singing competitions. It worked well for this trophy too. We didn't specify what it was for on the trophy itself in case someone outside the family saw it, but everyone knew.

## **Chapter 52: Home Again**

Everyone was worn out from the vacation and most of us slept on the flight home. We relieved the house-sitter we had hired, Stacey, a local college student between Sophomore and Junior years on her summer break. We had been careful to move all of the sex toys into the adults' rooms in case she went searching, which of course she did. We didn't tell her about the cameras recording everything since we didn't want to have to explain why they were in all of the bedrooms. I was glad I had hidden them all.

She did a great job looking after the houses and the dogs, but there really wasn't a lot to do. Most of the time this girl was a freak! She found the sex toys and used every one. She had invited friends over for some amazing sex parties. Mostly girls but some very lucky guys as well. They sunbathed and swam naked every day. She had Layla licking her pussy the second day, and every day after. She even tried the puppies, but stopped when one of them bit her.

The most amazing part was when she had her younger brother over. He looked to be about 14 and they did everything. He fucked her in every room. Then later she had her brother and a girlfriend over, who had younger siblings of her own; a brother of about 12 and a sister of about 10. They did a lot of things, but not everything. No one fucked the 10 year old, but they did everything else with her.

Sam and Beth recognized the girl from school and decided to befriend her. It took a while but by Halloween they were having some fun with her and her brother. They never mentioned the adults and we didn't join in. We didn't want to risk it. God but we sure fucked the hell out of each other watching them.

We invited Stacey to watch the place again when we all took a Christmas vacation later that year. We set up a trap for her and confronted her with a recording when we got back. We claimed something didn't look right around the house after the summer trip and that we wanted to be sure nothing weird happened this trip. We didn't get mad at her or try to scare her in any way. We just mentioned that if she and some of her girlfriends wanted to come over in the future we wouldn't object. That led to some really fun parties. Eighteen and older only though, we kept the other stuff with the kids very private. Their younger siblings did visit with our kids sometimes, but we never indicated that we knew anything was going on, but we were sure Stacey and her girlfriend did.

The grand opening of MiR was great. It looked like it was going to be a success. Pete didn't have to work too hard running the place. Instead he spent a lot of time there doing projects. Some were useless but fun. Some had a lot of potential. We worked with local schools trying to get kids into technology and science. I was proud to be involved with launching it.

I took a lot of trips over the summer to do research for my books. By the end I had twelve states checked off. Robyn, Sam and Ruth went with me sometimes. Other times it was just Robyn and I. Once it was just Sam and Beth. I planned to start publishing them by the end of the year. It wasn't as much of a priority for me anymore but Sam kept after me to do it and she got Robyn and Ruth to push me too.

Beth turned twelve in late July and Sam followed her in August. She wouldn't actually be twelve until January but we had left Cindy behind us. Both of the girls were developing quickly. Sam's little

titties were just scrumptious. They both were growing peach fuzz too. I enjoyed watching and feeling the way their bodies changed. They both loved to fuck and it seemed to only be increasing. Thank God they had each other or the rest of us would never get any peace.

After school started back up I stopped taking as many trips out. Robyn was getting kind of bored and I suggested she start a business. She opened a stripercise exercise/training studio. There were 7 poles, the center one for the instructor and 6 around it. Robyn taught some of the classes and drafted some of the girls she used to work with, including Amber and Jewel. She even did some after hours sessions with the four of us. This time my wonder wand was not off limits!

She even tapped into a market no one had apparently thought of. Women in the class were encouraged to bring in their boyfriends and husbands so they had someone to focus their performance on. There were six dressing rooms with showers for people in the class. Most of the time the partners joined the them for the after class shower. Robyn scheduled a lot of time for them to use the showers, not wanting to rush anyone.

She even had a special lunchtime class that only lasted ten minutes, but they could use the poles after if they wanted for up to the entire lunch hour. Couples usually hit the showers early so they could finish 'lunch' in time to get back to work. She charged a premium for those classes and they met once a week. The only rule in the changing room was that they had to clean up, and there were cleaning supplies provided. Failure to properly clean would mean forfeiting the class.

It was amazing how many couple seemed to get confused and go into another couples changing room. Sometimes the students would accidentally switch partners after a session. Needless to say, it was a popular place among a certain well-off clientele.

Robyn even taught some special after-hours classes for the rest of the girls. It was really hot to watch Sam, Beth and Ruth learn how to use a striptease pole, and use it well. They all got very good. Pete and

I sure had a lot of fun watching. Saved a bunch of \$1 bills too! Jess learned a little but she just wasn't up to getting really good at it. It isn't an easy thing to do. Yoga was more her speed. She did start her naked yoga class for all of us. We had to be sure nothing was planned after it because very often we ended the class with somebody fucking somebody else, or multiple somebodies.

The puppies were growing up fast. I noticed that Sam and Beth were working to train Seamus and Jaeger to do special tricks they couldn't do in public. I expected it when they selected male dogs. I remembered what Sam had said when we returned from Layla's mating. I had a long talk with them about bestiality. I told them that they had to respect the dogs as partners and not to make them do what they didn't want to. I told them that right now they were still puppies and that they didn't really understand how mating worked yet. I also told them to be careful. Dogs are different than people and they can be rough. They agreed to everything. I was looking forward to watching.

Ruth and Tyler showed no signs of returning to single life. They were 'married' and happily it seemed. None of us had a problem with it. They were together most every night, and they had sex regularly. I was actually a little jealous of Tyler, if I am being truthful.

Ruth waited until she was ready in both holes to have sex with me the first time. Robyn wanted to be with her and she was more than happy for her to be. I did it like I had for Beth, but with only Robyn and Sam there as well. I gotta say, fucking an eight year old is like nothing else on earth. I could only get about two-thirds of my dick in, but God, did it feel good. Having Sam and Robyn there too made it even better. Ruth enjoyed it so much we had sex every day for a week after. She would go 'home' to Tyler every night when we were done, but not until I had busted a nut inside of her and Sam or Robyn licked her clean. Best. Week. Ever!



## Chapter 53: Anniversary

I came home one night in October to find the house empty. Layla met me at the door and barked at me. I didn't know what was going on and I was concerned. Layla got me to follow her upstairs to our bedroom where I heard a noise coming from the bathroom. It dawned on my what was going on and I played my part, trying not to tear up. I went over to the bathroom door and slowly opened it. Sam was sitting on the floor looking at the door, frightened.

“Hi. Don't be scared. I'm not going to hurt you.”

“Really? Aren't you angry that I'm in your bathroom” she said, frightened.

“No, I'm not mad. Layla's not growling and that means she likes you. If Layla likes you, then I like you. My name is JR. What is your name?” We weren't doing it exactly like the first time, but that didn't matter. We were recreating it together and I was so full of emotions I could barely get the words out.

“Cindy. My name is Cindy.”

“So why are you in my bathroom Cindy?”

“I came in to hide from bad people who want to hurt me.” She really seemed frightened. Sam knew how reach my emotional core.

“Well, don't you worry then. They won't hurt you in here. I'll keep you safe, promise.”

“Really! Oh thank you JR. Thank you so much.” Sam came over and gave me a hug.

“Are you hungry? Let's go get something to eat.” That was the next thing we had done, and I was hungry.

“Yeah! I’m really hungry. Let’s go.” We went to the kitchen and there was Chinese food on the counter. She was good. It wasn’t the exact same thing I ordered that time, but close enough. I dished it out and we ate. Layla even came over and sat next to Sam with her head on Sam’s lap. Sam must have trained her. Layla’s a smart dog, but not that smart.

I wasn’t sure where she wanted to go after that. I was pretty sure she hadn’t hired a rent-a-cop to impersonate Uncle Charlie. Then she let me know we were jumping ahead a few days. “Okay, let’s go swimming! I’ll go put my suit on.” she said before she stripped of her clothes and ran to her bedroom. I followed after her and when I turned into her room I saw that a bottle of sun tan lotion was on her dresser. I took the hint.

“Hey, we should put this on before the suit, don’t you think? I don’t want you to burn.” I squirted some onto my hand.

“Okay, that’s a good idea.” she said, standing on the bed naked. We proceeded to recreate the entire encounter, including the impromptu hand job. “Time to shower!” she said, after licking my cum off of her hand.

She had planed it all out. We acted out our entire history until we first came to meet Jess, Pete, Beth and Tyler. She even had Beth come in at the end and they headed off to Sam’s room. Robyn then came in and sat down with me. I was crying. She held me in her arms. “That was amazing.” she said. “Sam planned it and set it all up herself. We’ve all been watching. She loves you so much, Ro. You are one lucky bastard, you know that?”

“I do know it. If she hadn’t picked my RV to hide in I would probably still be just stumbling through life. Instead I have a wonderful family, amazing friends and I life I couldn’t have imagined.”

“And I have you Daddy!” Sam said from behind me. She was starting to cry too and she climbed over the couch and into my arms. “I don’t even want to think about where I would be without you, Daddy.” she said before hugging me so hard I could barely breathe. “I can’t believe it has only been a year since it all started. It seems like it was a lifetime ago. I just want you to know you are the best Daddy ever!”

I slept with all three of my girls that night, all snuggling in our big bed. Sam would recreate our first meeting again every year on our anniversary. It got less elaborate as time went on, but I would still find her hiding in the bathroom when I got home.

I realized then that I truly was the luckiest man on earth. I almost killed myself driving like an idiot but I ended up learning what really mattered in this world: people. I’d like to think that all of the people in the world matter to me, but they don’t. There are too many for my brain to cope with.

No, the people closest to me are the ones that really matter. I have seven people in my life that matter dearly to me. Three that matter even more. And if I have to be honest, there is one that matters to me the most; Sam. I love Robyn with all of my heart, and Ruth. Sam is more. Sam is a part of me that I couldn’t never live without, and I will always love her.

## **Epilogue**

Ten more years have passed. It’s October, 2019. Eleven years since I first met Sam. Life has been good to me, to all of us. Layla died last year and that hit all of us hard. I was upset, but I knew it was coming. She was 14 years old and wasn’t getting around like she used to. All five of her puppies are still alive though, and that’s pretty amazing.

Tyler and Ruth just turned 18 in June. They got married the same day, the day they both turned 18. Ruth says it is because they don't want to have to remember any other dates. I think they are just nuts. Ruth wants to try to have her first baby on the same day. Knowing her, she might pull it off. Tyler and Ruth may have just gotten married this year according to Texas, but they've been married since they were eight. I never would have believed it was possible, but they have been together that whole time. They've had their share of fights, like any couple. But they work it out and move on.

They have both become accomplished rock musicians and have formed their own band. The band is called Layla. Most people think it is because of the song, but it is because of Layla the dog. Although Layla the dog was named after Layla the song, so I guess they all are right. They are like the backwards White Stripes because Tyler plays the drums and Ruth plays the guitar. Shy little Ruth will rock out like the best of them. I hope they make it.

Sam and Beth are 22. They got married also... to each other. They did it as soon as Texas allowed same-sex marriage. They're bisexual. Sam jokes that they are try-sexual... they'll try anything once. They live in a house right next to ours. We planned to buy the four houses around us when they come up for sale. We have two now. We're waiting for the others to come on the market.

Beth took after Pete and became an engineer. She went to UT Austin and just graduated in May. She is working at MiR and Pete is grooming her to take over the place.

Sam followed me and became an author. She writes romance novels, specifically lesbian and bi-sexual. She was always so good making up fantasies and stories, it just came naturally to her. She got her first one published at the age of 16 and has been quite successful. She just published her 14<sup>th</sup> book in July.

Sam is pregnant and is due in early March, right around my birthday. Since both Sam and Beth are girls, Tyler is the father. They

decided since Tyler and Beth are siblings the baby will still be related. Pete and Jess are overjoyed. They aren't going to name Tyler as the father, at least not officially. They will tell him or her when they are old enough, but at first just Sam and Beth will be the parents. They tried to talk me into being the father. Reversing my vasectomy isn't a problem, but I didn't want to do that with Sam. They are now trying to talk me into fathering a child with Beth and I'm considering it.

Robyn and I have talked about having children together. She is still young enough. If I have the surgery for Beth, I think we will. A whole new generation is on the way.

I finished all of my books and published them. The last one got published last year. I'm not making a bunch of money off of them, but more than enough to live on. I bought a big cabin on a lake out West. It was some kind of old retreat with one big central house and little ones around for people to stay. We visit every so often and we have thought about moving there now that everyone is out of school. We know we wouldn't all be able to move and no one wants to be apart from each other. Our big extended family is just too close.

So all of the kids are grown. I'm 43 years old and I'll be a grandfather before I turn 44. What do I want to do now? I don't know. I think I'll go take a walk and talk to Sam. Maybe she can bend my world for me again and start me on another great adventure.